



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2012 with funding from
Research Library, The Getty Research Institute

<http://archive.org/details/historicalrelati00oval>

An Historical

RELATION

OF THE

Kingdom of CHILE.

BY

ALONSO DE OVALLE,

OF

The Company of JESUS,

A Native of *St. Jago* of *Chile*, and Procurator
at *Rome* for that Place.

Printed at *Rome* by FRANCISCO CAVALLO, 1649.
with Licence of his Superiors.

Translated out of *Spanish* into *English*.

Translator's PREFACE.

WHEN the translation of the history of *Chile* was first undertaken, it was more out of consideration of making that part of the world, so remote from ours, better known, as to the geographical part, the natural history, and the first settlements of the *Spaniards*, than to enter into a distinct narrative of the events of that invasion, which contain little instruction, being between a people of great arts and abilities on one side, and another of great natural courage, and no culture of the mind or body, on the other. The case was so extravagantly unequal between them, when the odds of guns, armour, horses, and discipline, are weighed against nakedness, anarchy, panick terrors, and simplicity, that it seems a kind of prodigy that the love of liberty and a stock of natural unpolished bravery, should hold a contest with armed avarice, spirited by superstitious zeal, for almost a whole century.

The natural history of *Chile* is so admirably performed, that it may be a model for most relations of that kind; for there are exact descriptions of all the beasts, birds, fishes, plants, minerals, coasts, rivers, bays, and inhabitants of the country, that can be wished for. There is, besides, an excellent account of the climate, the seasons, the winds, the manner of living both of the *Indians* and the *Spaniards*. The description of the great *Cordillera*, or chain of mountains, which runs for almost a thousand leagues in a parallel line with the *South Sea*, and divides *Chile* from the *ultra* mountain provinces, is so accurate, that nothing of that kind can be more so: the narrative of the manner of travelling through those vast plains of *Cuyo* and *Tucuman*, as far as *Buenos Ayres*, and the river of *Plata*; the topographical description of the streights of *Magellan*, with all its bays, ports, and its whole navigation, are of great instruction, as well as very entertaining.

In all this the jesuit, who was the author of this history, must be confessed to have deserved the character of a candid inquisitive philosopher; and in what he has performed besides, about the settlements of the *Spaniards*, he is very particular, especially in his description of the city of *St. Jago de Chile*; where any one may see the progress of priest-craft in that new world, by the vast riches of the convents, monasteries, and nunneries: but above all the instructive chapters of this treatise, there is one about the methods of driving a trade between *Europe* and *Chile* to and from the *Philippines* and

The Translator's P R E F A C E

and *East Indies*, which contains secrets of commerce and navigation, which I wonder how they were published, and 'tis possible may, ere it be long, be practised by the *Spaniards* and other nations, if the navigation of the *Mexican* gulph becomes so troublesome, as it is like to be made by the naval powers of *Europe*, who seem to have chose those seas for the scene of all their maritime power to exert itself in.

There is a digression about the first discovery of the islands and continent of *America* by *Columbus*, and a progressive narration of all the other discoveries, as they were made, and by whom, which is very curious ; but as it is borrowed from other writers, the author can challenge no other merit than that of a judicious compiler.

All that needs to be added to this preface, is, to let the world know that the translation was first encouraged by the *Royal Society*, of which the translator has the honour to be a member ; and that it was two summers work, that it might be the less subject to errors ; and to prevent them, that worthy encourager of all natural knowledge, as well as of his own profession, in which he excels, Dr. *Hans Sloane*, has contributed very obligingly some of his care and attention.

T H E

BOOK I.

Of the Nature and Properties of the Kingdom of CHILE.

C H A P. I.

Of the Situation, Climate, and Division of the Kingdom of CHILE.

Situation.

THE kingdom of *Chile*, which is the uttermost bounds of *South America*, and has the kingdom of *Peru* to the north, begins at the 25th degree of south latitude, towards the *Antartick Pole*, and is extended in length five hundred leagues, as far as the streights of *Magellan*, and its opposite land, called *La Tierra del Fuego*, which reaches to the 59th degree. The breadth of *Chile* is various; for it may be said to extend itself one hundred and fifty leagues east and west, because though that which is properly call'd *Chile*, is not in many places above twenty or thirty leagues broad, which is generally its extent from the sea to the famous *Cordillera Nevada*, or chain of mountains cover'd with snow, (of which we shall speak in its proper place,) yet in the division of the bounds of the several governments of *America*, the king added to *Chile* those vast plains of *Cuyo*, which runs in length as far as *Chile* does, and are above twice as broad.

The opposite part of the world to this kingdom, is the meridian that passes between the island *Taprobana* of the Antients, which is *Zeilon*, and cape *Comorin*, beginning at twenty six degrees north of the equinoctial line. The inhabitants are properly antipodes to those of *Chile*; and those who inhabit the countries that reach from thirty seven degrees to forty four of the most westerly parts of *New Guinea*, would be also diametrically antipodes to the inhabitants of *Castille*; but 'tis yet uncertain, whether that part of the world is land or water; but this is certain, that it falls out in the division of *Castille*, and is opposite to it, and is west from *Chile* one thousand seven hundred leagues.

Climate.

This kingdom is comprehended in the third, fourth, and fifth climate: In that part of it which is in the third climate, the longest day is thirteen hours; and in the fifth climate, the day at longest is about fourteen hours, and something more, quite

VOL. III.

contrary to *Europe*, as being opposite to it, but not diametrically; for the longest day in *Chile* is *St. Lucias*, and the shortest *St. Barnaby's*; the sun is always there towards the north, and the shadows to the south.

OVALLE.
1646.


This is the situation of the kingdom of *Chile*, which borders upon the north with the province of *Aracama*, and the rich mines of silver of *Potosi*, where the kingdom of *Peru* begins; and on the south it has the great sea to the pole, and the islands discover'd in it. *Abraham Ortelius* was of opinion, that there was on this south side of the kingdom of *Chile*, a land which was contiguous with *New Guinea*; and this opinion lasted till we were undeceiv'd by those, who having pass'd by the strait of *St. Vincent*, otherwise call'd the strait of *Le Maire*, went round that south land call'd the *Tierra del Fuego*, and return'd to the north sea by the streights of *Magellan*; proving evidently the said land to be an island entirely separated from any other land; as I shall shew further in its proper place.

Chile has on the east *Tucuman* and *Buenos Ayres*, and to the north east *Paraguay* and *Brasil*; to the west it has the *South-Sea*, which, according to the opinion of *Antonio de Herrera*, is all that is comprehended between *Chile* and *China*, and begins at the *Golden Chersonesus*, or the island of *Sumatra*; and that sea is in breadth, east and west, two thousand seven hundred leagues.

According to what has been said, we may divide this kingdom into three parts: The first and principal is that which is comprehended between the *Cordillera Nevada* and the *South-Sea*, which is properly call'd *Chile*. The second contains the islands which are sow'd up and down upon its coast as far as the streights of *Magellan*. The third contains the province of *Cuyo*, which is on the other side of the snowy mountains, call'd the *Cordillera Nevada*, and run in length all along as far as the streights, and

B

in


 OVALLE. in breadth extends to the confines of *Tucuman*.
 1646.

To begin then with that part which is most properly call'd *Chile*: I confess I had rather the description of it had fallen to the lot of some stranger who had seen it; for then the danger of passing for too partial for one's own country (to which are expos'd all those who write of it) would have been more easily avoided, and such a one might with less apprehension enlarge upon the excellent properties which God has been pleas'd to endow it with. The common opinion of all those who have come from *Europe* to it, is, that its soil and its climate exceed all others they have seen; though, perhaps, in that they only make a return for the kind welcome they all meet with in those parts. As for my part, all I can say, is, that though it be like *Europe* in every thing, except in the opposition of the seasons, which are transpos'd, it being spring and summer in the one, when it is autumn and winter in the other, yet it has some properties which do really singularize it, and deserve the praises given it by travellers; for, first, neither the heat nor the cold are so excessive as in *Europe*, particularly as far as the 45th degree of latitude, for from thence to the pole the rigorous and excessive cold begins.

The situation accidental of the land of *Chile*, must be the cause of this temperature of the air; for being cover'd on the east by the high mountains of the *Cordillera*, which are all so prodigiously elevated, it receives the fresh and cooling breezes from the sea; and the tides which penetrate as far as the foot of the mountains, joining with the coolness of the snow, with which they are cover'd, refresh the Air so, that about four a-clock in the afternoon the heat is no ways troublesome. Nay, if one is in the shade, one may say, that in no hour of the day the sun is insupportable, especially from thirty six degrees or thereabouts, neither day nor night the heat can be complained of; which is the cause, that at the town of the *Conception*, which is in that situation, the covering for beds is the same winter and summer, neither of those seasons being any ways troublesome.

Another good quality of this country is, to be free from lightening; for though sometimes thunder is heard, 'tis at a great distance up in the mountain. Neither does there fall any hail in the spring or summer; or are those storms of thunder and lightening seen here, which in other parts make the bells be rung out, and the clouds to be exorcized; neither are there so many cloudy days in winter as in other parts; but most commonly after the rain has lasted two or three days, the heavens clear up, and look

as if the sky had been wash'd, without the least cloud, in a very short time after the rain; for as soon as ever the north wind, which brings the cloudy weather, ceases, the south succeeds, and in a few hours drives away the rain; or if it be in the night-time, the dew falls, and the sun rises brighter than ever.

This country is yet to be valued upon another propriety of it, which is, that it is free from poisonous creatures, such as vipers and snakes, scorpions or toads; so that one may venture to sit under a tree, or lie down and rowl on the ground, without fear of being bit by them. Neither are there tygers, panthers, or any other mischievous animals; except some lions of a small kind, which sometimes do harm to the flocks of sheep or goats, but never to men, whom they fly from; and this is not only in the cultivated land, where men are frequent, but in the woods and solitude, and in the thickest groves, of which there are some so close with trees, that one can hardly break through them afoot. I heard a friar of ours, who was an excellent Builder, say, that having gone for three months together in woods, where there was no sign of any one's having pass'd before, to find out trees proper for the timber of the church of *St. Jago*, he had never met with the least poisonous creature, that could either cause a nauseous idea, or a dangerous effect.

There is another most wonderful singularity of this same country, which is, that not only it does not breed, but will not suffer any *punaizes* or bugs to live in it; which is the more to be admir'd, that on the other side the mountains they swarm. I never saw one in it alive, for sometimes there are some in the goods and furniture of people who come from the province of *Cuyo*; but as soon as they feel the air of *Chile* they die. The experience that was made of this, by one that was either curious or malicious enough, was wonderful; for coming from *Cuyo* to *Chile*, he brought some of those creatures with him, well put up in a Box, and such food provided for them as to keep them alive; but no sooner were they come to the valley of *Aconcagua*, which is the first valley coming down from the mountains, but they all died, not so much as one remaining alive.

I do not say any thing here of the mines of gold, nor of those excellent waters which, running from them, are cordial and healthy; nor of the abundance of provisions for life, nor of the physical plants, nor of many other rare qualities in which this country exceeds others, as well to avoid confusion, as because those things will be better shew'd when we come to treat of each of them in particular in their proper place.

In

The climate and soil of Chile very like those of Europe.

In all other things the land of *Chile* is so like *Europe*, both in climate and soil, that there is very small or no difference; and it is very remarkable, that in such variety of discoveries made in *America*, none is so conformable in every thing with the *European* constitution, as this tract of *Chile*; for in most of the places between the tropicks, as *Brasil*, *Cartagena*, *Panama*, *Portobello*, and those coasts in that situation, the heats are violent, and continual all the year; and in some other places, such as *Potosi*, and the mountains of *Peru*, the cold is as excessive; in some they have a winter without rain, and have their rain in summer, when their heat is highest; others there are, where they have neither wine, oil, nor wheat of their own product; and though in some they may have these productions, yet the other fruits of *Europe* do not take with them; but *Chile* has, just as *Europe*, its four seasons, of spring, summer, autumn, and winter; it does not rain in summer, but in winter; and all the product of *Europe* agrees with their soil.

Several lands in the same latitude with Chile, yet much differing in climate from that and Europe.

One thing is much to be admir'd, and that is, that the land of *Cuyo*, that of *Tucuman*, and *Buenos Ayres*, being all in the same latitude with *Chile*, are nevertheless so different in climate from it and from *Europe*; for though in those parts it freezes exceedingly, so as to freeze water within doors; and that their cattle, if left abroad, die with cold, yet there does not fall a drop of rain all the winter, and the sun shines out so bright and clear, that not a cloud is to be seen: But in the spring they have such abundance of rain, that it would drown the whole country, if the showers lasted as long as in *Europe* or in *Chile*; for when the rain lasts but an hour and a half, the streets are full of streams in the towns, and the carts are up to their

axle-trees, though they are very high in those parts, and all the country is as it were a sea: There fall likewise at that time thunder-stones, and hail as big as a hen's egg, nay, as geese eggs, and sometimes as big as ostriches; as I myself have seen.

OVALLE.
1646.

All these storms and varieties of weather form themselves in the high mountains, that are a kind of wall to the kingdom of *Chile*; and they never come so far down as to invade its territories, but stop at them like a *barricado*; for in *Chile* the weather is always steady and constant, without sudden changes, all the spring, summer, and autumn; in winter, indeed, there are degrees of heat and cold, as there is a difference in the length and shortness of the days, according to the degrees of the latitude, and course of the sun, which causes the same variation as in *Europe*, though in opposite months.

From hence it follows, as authors do observe, and experience teaches, that there must be, and is, a great resemblance between the animals and other productions of *Chile* and those of *Europe*. As a proof of this, I have seen several gentlemen that came to *Chile* from other parts of *America*, either as commanders, or for other employments, which are in the king's disposal, incredibly overjoy'd at this conformity with *Europe*; for they think themselves, as it were, in their native country, the air and the provisions of both so like in their qualities: The meats are more nourishing than in hotter climates; and when those who have been either born or bred in those hot countries come to *Chile*, they are forced to abstain, and keep a watch upon their appetites, till their stomachs are used by little and little to the strength of the food of that country, and can digest it.

A great resemblance between the animals and other productions of Chile, and those of Europe.

CHAP. II.

Of the four Seasons of the Year, and particularly of the Winter and Spring: With a Description of some Flowers and Medicinal Plants.

The four seasons.

THE four seasons of the year, which are in *Europe* the *spring*, the *summer*, the *autumn*, and the *winter*, are with the same duration of time enjoyed in *Chile*, though not exactly under the same names, at the same time; for the *spring* begins about the middle of the *European August*, and lasts to the middle of *November*; then begins the *summer*, which holds to the middle of *February*; which is followed by the *autumn*, which lasts to the middle of *May*; and then the *winter* enters, and makes all the trees bare of their leaves, and the earth cover'd with white frosts, (which nevertheless dissolve about two hours

Winter.

after sun-rise, except in some cloudy days, that the icicles last from one day to another;) the *winter* ends again about the middle of *August*. 'Tis very seldom that the snow falls in the valleys or low grounds, though so great a quantity is upon the mountains, that it fills up sometimes all the hollow places to the height of several pikes, and there remains, as it were, in wells and reservatories, to provide, as it does in due time, so many springs and rivers with water, so fertilizing the valleys and plains, that they produce infinite crops of all sorts in the *autumn*, and enrich the kingdom. But notwithstanding that it seldom

1646. *W* OVALLE. seldom snows in the valleys and plains, yet it is so cold in them, that few parts of *Europe* are colder; which proceeds not only from the degree of elevation this land is in, but also from its neighbourhood to those vast mountains called the *Cordillera*, who send out such sharp and piercing winds, that sometimes they are insupportable; therefore the sea coast is much more temperate and warm; but in return, much more exposed to vehement tempests of winds, than the inland parts, where these storms are in some measure spent before they reach them, and so cannot whip them and torment them as they do the sea coasts.

Thorn-bushes in abundance, affording plenty of fuel.

For some protection against these sharp cold winds, God Almighty has placed several great clusters of thorn-bushes, which thrive so well, that it is the ordinary fuel of all the countries about the town of *St. Jago*, and the valleys near it. It is a plant not unlike an oak, though more durable; the heart of the wood is red, and incorruptible; of it they make coals for the furnace, and other shop uses. In other parts the true oak serves for the same purpose; as in the territory of the city of *Conception*, where there are very large woods of them, which are so thick, that though they have already served for the uses of the natives so many years, yet when they are enter'd, they can hardly be passed in the middle; and this within half a league of the city; for further up in the country there are forests, where no man ever set his foot.

Ever-greens.

Though these oaks, as also the fruit-trees, lose their leaves in winter, yet there are wild trees which do not, though all covered with ice and snow; and the cold is so far from injuring them, that when the sun melts the frost, they look brighter and more beautiful. As soon as the first rains come, the fields begin to be clothed in green, and the earth is covered in twenty or thirty days with grass; amongst which nature produces a sort of yellow flower in such abundance, that the plains and valleys look like carpets of green and yellow.

Spring.

These first rains seem to prepare the earth for its ornamental dress of flowers with the spring, which begins about the middle of *August*; and they last till *December*, that the heats come in, and that with such variety and abundance of so many kinds, that the fields look as if they had been painted, producing a most delightful object. I remember once, as I was travelling, I saw so great a diversity of these flowers, some scarlet, others blue, yellow, red, straw-colour, purple, &c. that I was mov'd to tell them, and I told

Description of some flowers,

in a short time two and forty sorts, so admirable was their variety; and yet I do not reckon among these the cultivated ones in gardens, nor those that were brought from *Europe*, such as carnations, roses, stock-gillyflowers, orange, lillies, poppies, lupins, &c. I only speak of those that grow wild, which are so odoriferous and sweet-scented, that 'tis out of them that they distil a water call'd *aqua d'angeles*, or, angel's-water. The smell of these flowers is perceived sweetest at the rising and setting of the sun; which mingled with the scent emitted by the herbs, which are very aromack, produce a most admirable perfume, and for that reason they put the sprouts and tops of them among the flowers which make the angel-water.

It is scarce possible to express the force with which the earth puts forth these plants, which is so great, that in many places 'tis hard to distinguish the cultivated from the uncultivated lands. One would think at first that all had been plowed and sowed alike; and with the continuance of the rains, the grass runs up so strong, and grows so intricate, that a horse can hardly break through it, it coming in most places to the faddle-girts.

Mustard-seed, turnips, mint, fennel, *Plants, &c.* trefoil, and other plants, which I see are sowed and cultivated in *Europe*, for the just esteem that is made of them, do all grow wild in *Chile*, without serving to the use of life at all, otherwise than by the cattle's feeding on them, which they may do for several leagues together. The mustard plant thrives so mightily, that it is as big as one's arm, and so high and thick, that it looks like a tree. I have travelled many leagues through mustard groves, which were taller than horse and man; and the birds build their nests in them, as the gospel mentions in these words, *ita ut volucres celi veniant & habitent in ramis ejus*; ^{Mat. xiii. 31.} so that the birds of the air come and lodge in the branches thereof.

There are many plants of great virtue in physick, and known only to the *Indians*, of the *Machis*, who are a race of men that are their doctors. These plants they conceal carefully, and particularly from the *Spaniards*, to whom if they communicate the knowledge of one or two, it is a great mark of their friendship; but the knowledge of the rest they reserve, and it passes from father to son. These *Machis*, or doctors, are not only esteem'd by the *Indians*, but by the *Spaniards* themselves, who have recourse to them in the greatest extremities, when the disease presses most. They find wonderful effects from the application of these simples, which they use in a lesser dose with the *Spaniards* than with the *Indians*.

dians, who are of a more robust nature, and stronger constitution.

Two remarkable cures performed by the Machis.

I saw one of our order much troubled with the falling-sickness and swooning fits, so as he was forced to have always some body in his company, or else he might have fallen down stairs, or otherwise killed himself: he had used all the remedies that the learning of physicians and the charity of religious men could suggest, but without any effect at all; nay, he was worse and worse every day. Our fathers learned at last, that about twelve leagues off from that place there lived an *Indian Machi*: they sent for him; and being come, and having heard the relation of his distemper, he gave him as much of a certain herb in wine as the bigness of a nail; and it had so great an effect, that it took away the distemper, as if he had taken it away with his hand, the person being never troubled with it more, all the time I knew him.

I have seen many other cures performed by these *Machis*, particularly in cases of poison; for in that sort of distemper they are very eminent. I shall mention but one instance, of a gentleman who had been pining away for several years, and often at death's door: once, being in extremam danger, he heard of a famous *Machi* who lived a great way off, but was a she-doctor, (for there are women amongst them eminent in the art:) he procured, by presents, to have her sent for; and having promised her a considerable reward, besides what he gave her in hand, which he was well able to perform, being very rich and powerful, she began to apply her remedies, which were herbs; and one day, when she saw his body prepared to part with the poison, she caused a great silver volder to be set in the middle of the room, and there, in the presence of many people, the gentleman having first been very sick in his stomach, he cast up the poison which had been given him many years before, wrapp'd up in hair, which came up with it; and he was perfectly well after this, as he himself related to me.

Though, as I have said, the *Indians* are so close in keeping secret the herbs they use, yet many of them, persuaded by reason, and induced by friendship, do communicate something; and time and experience has discover'd so many more, that if I should mention them all, I should be forc'd to make a book on purpose of them; therefore I shall only mention three that I have more present in my memory, the effects of which are prodigious.

Description of some medicinal herbs.

The first shall be the famous plant call'd *Quinchamali*, which rises not a foot above the ground, and its branches spread like a nosegay, and end in little flowers at the

points, which, both in colour and shape, are not unlike the saffron call'd *Romi*. They pull up the herb, and boil it entire with its root, leaves, and flowers, in fair water, which is given to the Patient to drink hot: amongst other effects it produces, one is to dissolve all coagulated blood in the body, and that very quickly; so that an *Indian* feeling himself wounded, takes it immediately, to hinder the blood that could not come out at the wound from congealing inwardly, and so prevents all imposthumation, and the corruption of the rest.

There happened in our college of *St. Jago* an accident, which gave proof of this admirable herb; which was, That an *Indian* belonging to us being gone to the great place to see the bull-feast, a bull, to his great misfortune, catch'd him up, and toss'd him in the air, and left him almost dead on the ground; he was brought to our house, and the physician, being called, said he was a dead man, and nothing could save him: but, however, he told the father that has care of the sick, that it would cost but little to give him the *Quinchamali*, wrap him up warm, and leave him alone some hours. It was done accordingly; and after some time, the father resorting to the place where they had laid him, to see if he was dead, he was found not only alive, but out of danger, and the sheet all full of blood, which the herb had caus'd him to void through the pores of his body, so as he remain'd perfectly well in a little time.

The second herb is that which we *Spaniards* call *Albaaquilla*, and the *Indians*, *Culen*, because its leaves are like the leaves of sweet basil: it grows in bushes so high, that they seem to be trees; the leaves are very fragrant, and sweet like honey: being bruised, it is applied to the wound outwardly, and some drops of its juice are to be poured also into the wound; after which most admirable effects of its efficacy are seen.

I was told by captain *Sebastian Garcia Carrero*, the founder of our novitiat-house of *Bucalemo*, that as he was travelling with a dog in his company, which he loved extremely, some wild monkeys that live in the mountains fell upon him, and so worried him among them by biting him, some on one side and some on the other, that they left him full of wounds, and particularly with one large one in his throat: his master came up at last, and found him without sign of life: he was much troubled for the loss of his dog, and lighted to see what he could do for him. This *Albaaquilla* is an herb that grows every where in the fields; and the gentleman, at a venture, gathering three or four handfuls of it, bruized them between

1646. **OVALLE.** two stones, and poured the juice into the dog's wounds, and into the great one of his throat he thrust a handful of it, and so left him without hopes of life: but it fell out wonderfully, that after a few leagues travelling on, turning back to look at something, he saw his dog following at a distance, who was so well cured that he lived many years after.

The third herb, that I can remember, is like a knot of fine hair, and which is not commonly met with: this is an admirable herb in fevers and pleurisies; it is boiled in water, and drank; it purifies and cleanses the blood, expelling that which is bad, and so the sick body remains perfectly

cured; as I my self have had the experience of it.

There are several other plants, some of which cure the pains of the liver; others dissolve the stone in the bladder, and break it to pieces; some are excellent for the sciatica and other infirmities; all which, if I were to relate in particular, I should make a new *dioscorides*, or herbal, which is not my intention. We will therefore leave the flowers and herbs of the spring, the harmony of the singing of birds, which so rejoices the mornings, and the serene and quiet days of this season, to draw near the summer; which will afford us matter of discourse.

C H A P. III.

Of the Summer and Autumn, and their Product.

Summer.

THE Summer begins in the middle of November, and lasts to the middle of February, so that the greatest heats are at Christmas; and we are forc'd to have recourse to our faith, to consider the *Child* God trembling with cold in the manger; for when we rise to sing *matins*, particularly in *Cuyo* and *Tucuman*, where the heats are excessive, we are ready to melt with heat. In *Chile* the heats are not so excessive, because the country is more temperate; but still the weather is not so cold as it was in *Bethlem*. About this time the fruits begin to ripen, which are in great variety; and there are but few of those of *Europe* that are wanting; for as soon as any of them are brought, either in stone, seed, or plant, they take, and 'tis wonderful to see how they thrive. I remember about thirty years ago there were no cherries; there coming by chance a little tree from *Spain*, from which all the curious began to multiply them in their gardens, (it being both a rarity, and a valuable fruit;) in a small time they were so increased, that they were banish'd from the gardens to the fields, because they produced so many young plants from their roots, that they took up all the ground about them.

Description of fruits.

Of the fruits of *Peru*, *Mexico*, and all the continent of *America*, not one will grow in *Chile*; and the reason is, the opposition of the climate of *Chile*; nay, though they bring either plant, seed, or setting, they never thrive; for those countries are within the tropicks, and *Chile* is out of them: for which reason also the fruits of *Europe* take so well in *Chile*, such as pears, abricots, figs, peaches, quinces, &c. which bear infinitely; and if there is not care taken to lessen their number when little, it is impossible for the boughs to bear

the weight of the fruit, so that they are fain to prop them up with forks when they grow near ripe.

The fruit that exceeds all the rest for bearing, is the apple of all kinds, of which there are prodigious orchards; and of these, though they lessen the number, yet the others increase so much in weight, that the trees are brought down to the ground; so that there are many windfalls, filling all the ground about them, and the very rivers on which they stand, and stopping the course of the water.

All the crops of oats, wheat, maiz, and *Grain*, all other garden product, begin to be cut in *December*, and so on to *March*; and they seldom produce less than twenty or thirty for one, nay, some a hundred for one, and the maiz four hundred for one; and 'tis very seldom that there is any scarcity of grain, but it is very cheap most commonly.

As for the fruit of the gardens, it is never or rarely sold, but any body may, without hinderance, step into a garden or orchard, and eat what they will; only the strawberries, which they call *Frutilla*, are sold; for though I have seen them grow wild for miles together, yet, being cultivated, they are sold very dear: they are very different from those I have seen here in *Rome*, as well in the taste, as in the smell; and as for their size, they grow to be as big as pears, most commonly red, but in the territory of the *Conception* there are of them white and yellow.

About this time also the herds that fatten the cattle grow ripe; and then they begin to kill them with great profit, it being the chiefest riches of the country, by reason of the tallow and hides which are sent for *Peru*. They kill thousands of cows, sheep, goats; and the flesh, being so cheap that it is not worth saving, they throw it away into the

sea

sea or rivers, that it may not infect the air; only they salt the tongues and loins of the cows, which they send for *Peru* as presents to their friends; and they who are able, and understand it, send likewise some dried salt-fish for the king's forces, or keep it to feed their own slaves or servants.

Autumn. *Autumn* begins about the middle of *February*; so *lent* proves the most delicious time of the year; for besides lobsters, oysters, crabs, and other sorts of shell-fish and sea-fish of all kinds, they fish in the ponds and rivers for trouts, *Vagres*, *Pejerages*, and other very choice river-fish of several kinds; and at the same time there is a great plenty of pulse, and garden-product, as gourds, all sorts of fruit, particularly quinces, which are as big as one's head, and another kind called *Lucumas*, of which they make so many dishes, that the mortification of fasting is hardly perceived.

Time of gathering olives and grapes. In the end of *Autumn* they begin to gather the olives and the grapes; and this lasts the months of *May* and *June*. The wines are most noble and generous, and fam'd by the authors who write of this country: there is such plenty of them, that the

plenty is a grievance, there being no vent for such quantities: it kills the *Indians*, because when they drink, 'tis without measure, till they fall down; and it being very strong, it burns up their inward parts: the best kind is the *Muscatel*. I have seen some that look like water; but their operation is very different in the stomach, which they warm like brandy.

There are white wines also very much valued; as those of the grapes called *Uba Torrontes*, and *Albilla*: the red and deep-colour'd are made of the ordinary red grape, and the grape called *Mollar*. The bunches of grapes are so large, that they cause admiration; particularly I remember one, which, because of its monstrous bigness, was by its owner (a gentleman) offer'd to our lady's shrine: it was so big as to fill a basket, and to feed the whole convent of friers for that meal, and they are pretty numerous. The branches of the vines are by consequence very big, and the trunk or body of them is in some places as thick as a man's body, and no man can encompass with extended arms the heads of them, when they are in full bloom.

OVALLE.
1646.

C H A P. IV.

Of the natural Riches of the Kingdom of Chile; which are its Mines of Gold, and other Metals; as also of the industrious Management of its other Product.

Two sorts of riches. THE riches of *Chile* are of two sorts: first, those which nature has bestowed on it, without the help of human industry; and, secondly, those which have been produced and invented by the inhabitants, to improve and enjoy its fertility. To the first kind belong its mines of gold, silver, copper, tin, quick-silver, and lead, with which heaven has enriched it. Of the copper of *Chile* are made all the great guns for *Peru* and the neighbouring kingdoms, in the garrisons of which there are always stores, particularly on the coasts: all the bells of the churches, and utensils for families, are of this metal; so that since the working of these mines, no copper has come from *Spain*; for the *Indies* are sufficiently supplied by them with all they can want.

Little lead, and less quick-silver. There is little lead work'd, because there is little use of it; quick-silver less, because the mines are but newly discovered; and as they were going to work them, the obstacle to those of *Guanacablica* in *Peru* was removed, and so there was no need of working those of *Chile*. Those of silver likewise lie unwrought, because the golden mines are of less charge, and so every body has turned their industry to-

wards them: they are so many, and so rich, that from the confines of *Peru* to the extreamest parts of this kingdom, as far as the streights of *Magellan*, there is no part of the country but they discover them; which made father *Gregory* of *Leon*, in his map of *Chile*, say, That this country ought rather to have been called a plate of gold, than to go about to reckon up its golden mines, which are innumerable.

All the authors who have writ of this country, do mightily enlarge upon its riches; and the same is done by all those who have navigated the streights of *Magellan*: *Antonio de Herrera*, in his general history of the *Indies*, says, That in all the *West-Indies*, no gold is so fine as that of *Valdivia* in *Chile*, except the famous mine of *Carabaya*; and that when those mines were first work'd, (which was before those *Indians* who are now at peace with us were at war,) an *Indian* among them did use to get from them every day 20 or 30 *peso's* of gold, which comes to near 500 reals of plate, and was a wonderful gain.

And the already-cited *John* and *Theodore Great de Brye* say, That when the *Nodales* passed the streights of *St. Vincent*, otherwise

plenty of gold.

QUALLE. called streights of *Le Maire*, there came
1646. some *Indians* from the country called *La*
Tierra del Fuego, who exchanged with the
Spaniards a piece of gold of a foot and a
half long, and as broad, for scissars, knives,
needles, and other things of little value;
for they do not value it as we do. Other
authors say, that most of the gold that was
laid up in the *Incas* treasure, was brought
to him from *Chile*, though having never
subjected the *Araucanos*, he could not have
that quantity which this rich country would
else have afforded.

But what need I weary myself in cita-
tions of people abroad, when those who
live in the country of *Chile*, and see it every
day, are the best testimony of the great
riches that the *Spaniards* have drawn from
these mines; which was so great, that I
have heard the old men say, That in their
feasts and entertainments they us'd to put
gold-dust in their salt-fellers, instead of
salt; and that when they swept the house,
the servants would often find grains of gold
in the sweepings, which they would wash
out, for the *Indians* being the persons that
brought it to their lords, they would often
let some fall.

Gold more
plenty than
Silver. I have said before, that it was much
more easy to get gold than silver out of
the mines, because this last costs much
pains; first, to dig it from the hard rock,
then to beat it in the mills to powder,
which mills are chargeable, as is also the
quick-silver, necessary to be us'd to make
the silver unite, and all the rest of the op-
erations requisite to refine it; but the ad-
vantage of getting gold has no other trou-
ble in it, than to carry the earth in which
it is found to the water, and there wash it
in mills on purpose, with a stream which
carries off the earth, and the gold, as being
heaviest, goes to the bottom.

'Tis true, that sometimes they follow
the gold vein through rocks and hard places,
where it grows thinner and thinner, till at
last the profit that arises is very small; yet
they persist to follow it, in hopes it will
grow larger, and end at last in that which
they call *Bolsa*, which is, when coming to
a softer and easier part of the rock, the
vein enlarges so, that one of these hits is
enough to enrich a family for all their lives.
There is now less gold found than formerly,
by reason of the war the *Spaniards* have
had with the nation of *Araucanos*; but
still some is found, particularly in *Co-*
quimbo, where, in the winter, when it
rains much, is the great harvest of gold;
for by the rain the mountains are wash'd
away, and the gold is easier to come at.
There is likewise some gold in the terri-
tory of the *Conception*; in which I was
told, by a captain who enter'd into our

society, That there was, not above half
a league from the town, a pond, or stand-
ing-water, which is not deeper than half
the height of a man; and that when the
Indians have nothing to spend, they send
their wives to this pond; and they going
in, feel out with their toes the grains of
gold; and as soon as they have found
them, they stoop and take them up. They
do this till they have got to the value of
two or three *peso's* of gold; and then
they seek no longer, but go home, and
do not return for any more as long as that
lasts; for they are not a covetous people,
but are content to enjoy, without laying
up.

A peso is
about the
value of
eight shil-
lings.

I brought with me to *Italy*, one of these
grains thus found, of a pretty reasonable
bigness; and sending it at *Seville* to be
touch'd, without either putting it in the
fire, or using other proofs, it was allowed
to be of twenty three carats, which is a
very remarkable thing. Now the peace
is made, and the warlike *Indians* quiet,
the *Spaniards* may return to search for
the gold of *Valdivia*, and other mines
thereabouts, which will extremely increase
the riches of the country.

As for the product made by the industry
of the inhabitants, it consists particularly
in the breed of their cattle of all kinds,
as I have observ'd above; sending the tal-
low, hides, and dried flesh, for *Lima*;
where having first retain'd the necessary
proportion for themselves, which is about
twenty thousand quintals of tallow every
year for that city, and hides accordingly,
they distribute the rest all over *Peru*: the
hides, particularly, are carried up to *Po-*
tofi, and all that inland tract of mines,
where most of their cloathing comes from
Chile; they are also carried to *Panama*,
Carthagena, and the rest of that continent;
some of this trade extends itself likewise to
Tucuman and *Buenos Aires*, and from thence
to *Brasil*.

Breeding of
cattle the
chief pro-
duct of
Chile.

The second product is the cordage and
tackling, with which all the ships of the
South-Seas are furnish'd from *Chile*; as also
the match for fire-arms, with which all the
king's garrisons along the coast are provi-
ded from those parts; for the hemp which
makes the first material of all these provi-
sions, grows no where in the *West-Indies*
but in *Chile*: there is also packthread ex-
ported, and other smaller cordage.

Cordage,
tackling
for ships,
and match
for fire-
arms.

The third product is mules, which are
sent to *Potofi*, through the desert of *Ara-*
cama.

Mules.

The fourth product is the cocoa-nuts,
which are the fruit of the palm-trees; and
do not, indeed, proceed from industry,
but grow wild in the mountains, without
any cultivation, so thick, that I have seen
several

Cocoa-nuts.

Almonds. several leagues of this tree. Almonds likewise, and the product of gardens, which do not grow in *Peru*, are carried thither with great profit, so as to be able to set up a young beginner. When I came to *Lima*, I observed that the anniseed which had been bought at *Chile* for two pieces of eight, was sold there for twenty; and the cummin-seed, bought at twenty, was sold for fourscore; which makes merchants very willing to trade to those parts, as hoping to grow rich in a small Time; and this increases the riches of *Chile*, by drawing every day thither men with good stocks. The gains made this way are so considerable, that a man who has about forty thousand crowns to employ in land, flocks, and slaves, to take care of them, may every year have a revenue of ten or twelve thousand crowns, which is a gain of twenty five *per cent.* very lawful, and without any trouble to one's conscience, or subjection to the dangers of the seas: for those who will run the hazards of that element gain much more; for the merchants, by many commodities, get a hundred, and two hundred, nay, three hundred *per cent.* in a navigation of about three weeks, which is the time usually employed from *Chile* to *Lima*, without any fear of pirates, all those seas being entirely the king of *Spain's*, and so free from those robbers. Besides, 'tis very seldom that any storms are felt in that voyage, or, at least, not any that endanger the loss of the ships. The greatest danger proceeds from the covetousness of the owners and merchants, who trusting to the peaceableness of those seas, and that they sail all the way from *Chile* to *Lima* before the wind, they load up to the mid-mast. 'Tis not exaggeration; because I have seen them go out of the port with provisions for the voyage, and other necessities, as high as the ropes that hold the masts; and though the king's officers are present to hinder the ships from being overloaded, yet generally they are so deep in the water, that they are but just above it; and with all these, there are many goods left behind in the magazines of the port; for the land is so productive of every thing,

Great encouragement to merchants.

that the only misfortune of it, is to want a *OVALLE.* vent for its product, which is enough to supply another *Lima*, or another *Potosi*, if there were one. 1646.

'Tis upon this foundation, that 'tis affirmed generally, that no country in all *America* has a more solid establishment than *Chile*; for in proportion to the increase of inhabitants in *Peru*, *Chile* must increase too in riches, since it is able to supply any great consumption, and yet have enough of its own in all the kinds of corn, wine, flesh, oil, salt, fruits, pulse, wool, flax, hides, tallow, chamois, leather, ropes, wood, and timber, medicinal remedies, pitch, fish of all kinds, metals of all sorts, and amber. There wants silk; and 'tis to be wished that it may never get thither, but for ornament to the altars; for it is already the beggering of the country, by reason of the great expence in rich cloaths; particularly by the women, who are not outdone in this, even by the bravest ladies of *Madrid*, or other parts; but yet the land is so proper for silk-worms, that if any one carries the seed of them there, I am persuaded it will take with great abundance, the mulberry-trees being there already as full grown, and in as great beauty as in *Spain*.

The wax likewise comes from *Europe*, though there are bees who make both honey and wax. Pepper, and other *east-india* spices, come from abroad, though there is a kind of spice which supplies the want of them very well; and the authors above cited say, That in the streights of *Magellan*, there is good cinnamon; and that on those coasts there grow trees of a most fragrant smell in their bark, and which have a taste like pepper, but of a more quick savour, as it shall be made out when we treat of that streight.

In the whole kingdom, the herbage and the fishing are in common; as also the hunting; and the woods for fuel and timber; and the same is practised as to the salt mines. There is no imposition on trade through all the kingdom, every one being free to transport what goods he pleases, either within or without the kingdom. *Herbage, fishing, hunting, woods for fuel, and salt mines, all in common.*

CHAP. V.

Of the Famous Cordillera of Chile.

Description of the Cordillera.

THE *Cordillera*, or high mountains of *Chile*, are a prodigy of nature, and without parallel in the world: 'Tis a chain of high mountains, which run from north to south from the province of *Quito*, and the new kingdom of *Granada*, to *Chile*,

above a thousand *Castilian* leagues, according to *Antonio de Herrera*, in his third tome, *Decade 5.* to which adding the length of the kingdom of *Chile* to the streights of *Magellan*, it will make in all little less than 1500 leagues. The remotest part of *Chile*

OVALLE is not above twenty or thirty leagues from the sea. These mountains are forty leagues broad; with many precipices, and intermediate valleys, which are habitable till one comes to the tropicks; but not beyond them, because of the perpetual snows with which they are always covered.

Antonio de Herrera, already cited, puts two chains of mountains; one much lower, covered with woods and handsome groves, because the air is more temperate near it; the other much higher, which by reason of the intense cold, has not so much as a bush on it, the mountains being so bare, that there is neither plant nor grass on them: but he says, that on both these sorts of mountains there are several animals, which because of the singularity of their kinds, I shall here describe some of them.

Description
of several
animals.

Hogs.

One of the most remarkable, is a species of hogs, that have their navel in their back, upon the back-bone: they go in herds, and each herd has its leader, who is known from them all; because when they march, none dares go before him, all the rest follow in great order. No hunter dares fall on these herds till he has killed this captain, or leader; for as long as they see him, they will keep together, and shew so much courage in their own defence, that they appear invincible; but as soon as they see him killed, they are broke, and run for it, giving up the day, till they chuse another captain.

Their way of eating is also admirable: they divide themselves into two bodies; one half of them goes to certain trees which are in a country called *Los Quixos*, in the Province of *Quito*, and are like the cinnamon-trees: these they shake to bring down the flowers, which the other half feeds on; and when they have eat enough, they go and relieve the other half of the flock, and make the flowers fall for them; and so return the service to their companions, that they have received from them.

Monkeys.

There are many sorts of monkeys, who differ mightily in their shapes, colour, and bigness, and other Properties: some are merry; some melancholy and sad; these whistle, the others chatter; some are nimble, others lazy; some cowards, others stout and courageous; but yet when one threatens them, they get away as fast as they can. Their food is fruit and birds-eggs, and any game they can catch in the mountains: they are very much afraid of water; and if they happen to wet or dirty themselves, they grow dejected and sad. There are also great variety of parrots.

Goats.

The wild goats are numerous: they are called *Vicunnas*, and have so fine hair, that it seems as soft as silk to the touch: this is used to make the fine hats so much valued

in *Europe*. There are likewise a sort of sheep of that country, they call *Quanacos*, which are like camels, but a good deal less, of whose wool they make waistcoats, which are woven in *Peru*, and are more valued than if they were of silk, for their softness, and the fineness of their colours.

The same author says, moreover, That *Two famous highways*. through this chain of mountains there went two highways, in which the *Ingas* shewed their great power; one of them goes by the mountain all paved for nine hundred leagues, from *Posito* to *Chile*: it was five and twenty foot broad, and at every four leagues were noble buildings; and to this day there are the places called *Tambos*, which answer our inns, where every thing necessary is to be found by travellers; and that which was most admirable, at each half-league there were couriers and posts, who were designed for the convenience of passengers, that they might send their letters and advices where they were requisite. The other way, which was also of twenty-five foot broad, went by the plain at the foot of the mountains, with the same proportion and beauty of inns and palaces at every four leagues, which were enclosed with high walls; as also streams and rivolets running through this way, brought thither by art, for the refreshment and recreation of travellers.

This is what *Antonio de Herrera*, and other authors, who treat of the *Indies*, do tell us about this famous *Cordillera*: now I shall relate what I myself have seen, and do know about it.

And first, I must suppose, that though these two highways run separate and distinct through all *Peru* and *Quito*, yet they must grow nearer each other as they rise higher in the mountain; for when they come to *Chile*, they are no longer two, but one. This is clearly found, by experience, in those who cross the *Cordillera*, to go from *Chile* to *Cuyo*, as I have done several times, that I have passed this mountain, and never could see this division, but always continual and perpetual mountains, which serve for walls and fortifications on each side to one which rises in the middle infinitely higher than the rest, and is that which most properly is called the *Cordillera*. I am also persuaded, that the two ways above mentioned came but to the boundaries of *Chile*, and ended in those of *Peru*. I have, indeed, in passing the *Cordillera*, met with great old walls of stone on the top of it, which they call the *Ingas*; which, they say, were encampments, (though not his, for he never came to *Chile*,) but of his generals and armies sent to conquer the country; and 'tis not impossible but the said two ways might be continued on to these buildings; but it was not practicable, that it could be with that

perfection, as in that part of the mountain contained within the tropicks; where because the hills are more tractable, such ways might be made as they describe; but not in the mountains of *Chile*, which are one upon another so thick, that it is with great difficulty that a single mule can go in the paths of it: and the *Cordillera* grows rougher and rougher; the more it draws nearer the pole, so that it appears to be above the compass of human power to open a way through it, so curious and finely contrived as it is represented. It was not necessary that the *Inga* should use so much art and industry, to make admirable that which is already so much so, as this mountain is in its whole course through the kingdom of *Chile*, as it shall be shewed when we discourse in particular of its several parts and properties. For, first, supposing what we have said of its running fifteen hundred leagues in length, and forty in diameter, its wonderful height makes it astonishing: the ascent is so prodigious, that we employ three or four days in arriving to the top of it, and as many more in the descent, that is, speaking properly, and only of the mountain, for otherwise it may be affirmed, that one begins to mount even from the sea-side, because all the way, which is about forty leagues, is nothing but an extended shelving coast; for which reason the rivers run with such force, that their streams are like mill-streams, especially near their heads.

Sudden
change of
air.

When we come to ascend the highest point of the mountain, we feel an air so piercing and subtle, that 'tis with much difficulty we can breathe, which obliges us to fetch our breath quick and strong, and to open our mouths wider than ordinary, applying to them likewise our handkerchiefs to condense our breath, and break the extreme coldness of the air, and so make it more proportionable to the temperament, which the heart requires, not to be suffocated: This I have experienced every time that I have passed this mighty mountain.

Don *Antonio de Herrera* says, That those who pass it in *Peru*, suffer great reachings and vomitings; because no one thing produces so great an alteration at once, as a sudden change of air; and that of the mountain being so unproportioned to common respiration, produces in those who pass over it those admirable and painful effects. He says moreover, that those who have endeavoured to dive into the causes of them, do find, That as that mountain is one of the highest in the world, the air of it is so extreme subtle and fine, that it discomposes the temperament of the animal, as has been said. 'Tis true, that in that part of the *Cordillera* in *Peru*, which they call *Pariacaca*, there may be a concurrence of other causes

and disposition of the climate, to which OVALLE. may be attributed some of these effects; for 1646. if they were to be attributed only to the height of the mountain, we that pass it in *Chile* ought to find those inconveniences as much, or more, because the mountain is highest without comparison; and yet I never endured those reachings or vomitings, nor have seen any of those motions in others, but only the difficulty of breathing, which I have mentioned.

Others experience other effects, which I Exhalations and other meteors. have often heard them relate; for the exhalations, and other meteors, (which from the earth seem so high in the air, that sometimes we take them for stars,) are there under the feet of the mules, frightening them, and buzzing about their Ears. We go through the mountains treading, as it were, upon clouds; sometimes we see the earth without any opposition to our sight, and when we look up, we cannot see the heavens for clouds; but when we are ascended to the highest of the mountain, we can no longer see the earth for the clouds below, but the heavens are clear and bright, and the sun bright and shining out, without any impediment to hinder us from seeing its light and beauty.

The *Iris*, or *Rainbow*, which upon the Rainbow. earth we see crossing the heavens, we see it from this height extended under our feet; whereas those on the lower parts see it over their heads: nor is it a less wonder, that while we travel over those hills which are dry and free from wet, we may see, as I have done often, the clouds discharge themselves, and overflow the earth with great force; and at the same time that I was contemplating, at a distance, tempests and storms falling in the valleys and deep places, as I lifted up my eyes to heaven, I could not but admire the serenity over my head, there being not so much as a cloud to be seen, to trouble or discompose that beautiful prospect.

The second thing which makes this Snow. mountain admirable, is the prodigious snow which falls upon it in winter, which is so great, that though these mountains are so high and broad, there is no part of them uncovered with snow, being in many places several pikes deep. I am not informed how it is in the highest part of all, which is most properly called the *Cordillera*, because this being so very high, that it is thought to surpass the middle region of the air, its point alone may perhaps be uncovered; at least, when I passed it, which has been sometimes in the beginning of winter, I have not seen a crum of snow; when a little below, both at the coming up and going down, it was so thick, as our mules sunk in without being able to go forward.

But

OVALLE. But that which I have observed, is, That
 1646. after a glut of rain, which has lasted two
 The Cordillera white from top to bottom after a glut of rain. or three days, and the mountain appears clear, (for all the time it rains 'tis covered with clouds,) it seems white from top to bottom, and is a most beautiful sight; for the air is so serene in those parts, that when a storm is over, the heavens are so bright, even in the midst of winter, that there is

not a cloud to be seen in them for many days; then the sun shining upon that prodigious quantity of snow, and those coasts and white shelvings all covered with extended woods, produces a prospect which, even we that are born there, and see it every year, cannot forbear admiring, and draws from us praises to the great creator for the wonderful beauty of his works.

CHAP. VI.

Of the Vulcanos, and the Mines of Gold and Silver of the Cordillera.

Vulcanos. THERE are in this *Cordillera*, or chain of mountains, sixteen *Vulcanos* which at several times have broke out, and caused effects no less admirable than terrible and astonishing to all the country: amongst the rest, that which happened in the year 1640. is worthy to be remembered. It broke out in the enemy's country, in the territory of the *Cacique Aliante*, burning with so much force, that the mountain cleaving in two, sent forth pieces of rock all on fire, with so horrible a noise, that it was heard many leagues off, just like the going off of cannon. In all that territory the women miscarried for fear, as shall be related more particularly in its proper place, in the account I shall give of the subjection of all that country to our catholick king, being moved thereunto by this and other prodigies.

The first of these *Vulcanos* is called the *Vulcano of Copiapo*, and is in about twenty six degrees altitude of the pole, about the confines of *Chile* and *Peru*; in thirty degrees is that of *Coquimbo*; in thirty one and a half that of *La Ligua*; in thirty five that of *Peteroa*; in thirty six and a half that of *Chilau*; in thirty seven and a quarter that of *Antoco*: this is followed by that of *Notuco* in thirty eight and a half; that of *Villarica* is in thirty nine and three quarters; near this is another, whose name I know not, in forty and a quarter; and in forty one is that of *Osono*; and near that, in less than a quarter of a degree, that of *Guanabuca*; and in a little more than forty two degrees that of *Quebucabi*: and last of all are two more; one without a name, in forty four; and that of *St. Clement*, which is in forty-five and a half.

These are the known *Vulcanos* of *Chile*: we have no knowledge of others, which may be as far as the *Tierra del Fuego*, because till this time our discoveries have not gone so far; but there is no doubt but there are some, as they are to be found before one comes to *Chile*, in the kingdoms of *Peru* and *Quito*. *Diego Ordonnes de Salvos*, in the third book and eighteenth chapter of

his *Voyage through the whole World*, mentions, among the rest, one that is near the fall of the river, in the valley of *Cola*; and says, it is on a mountain in the form of a sugar-loaf, like that of *La Plata* in *Potosi*; and that in winter it throws out so much smoak and ashes, that it burns up all the grass within two leagues round about it.

He likewise mentions another in the entrance of the province of *Los Quixos*, near the town of *Maspa*; and speaks of another, which broke out near *Quito*, in a mountain called the *Pinta*: and he affirms, that the ashes fly two leagues and a half from the mountain; and he has seen them lie on the houses above four foot deep in the nearest places to the mountain.

Lastly, he tells of that of *Ariquipa*, which buried the vineyards, and had almost overwhelmed the city. To this day there are seen the effects of that desolation, which ruined many families, by destroying their houses and possessions. At the same time he observes, that the earthquakes which before were frequent, ceased from that time; and this perhaps may be the reason why the earthquakes in *Chile* have always been considerably less than those of *Peru*, because *Chile* has more breathing holes for the vapours to exhale by.

There is no room for doubting of the immense riches which these mountains enclose in their bowels; for 'tis a certain argument, and proof of it, to see only the mineral riches of *Chile*, which are, as it were, indexes of what may be contained in those rocks, as the rivers which fertilize the country are a proof of the unexhausted fountains contained in the rocks and precipices.

I think there may be two causes assigned, *The concealing of treasure from all foreign nations, is a maxim of state among the Indians.* why these riches do not manifest themselves nor appear more: the first is, that general state reason, and inviolable maxim among the *Indians*, to conceal and not discover them to any other nation. This they observe so punctually, that it is among them a capital crime, punishable with death, to break silence in this matter, which they make sacred and indispensable; and if any one

one among them, either out of interest, negligence, or any other motive of convenience, discovers any thing of this kind, his death is infallible, and no power on earth can save him.

A remarkable relation of a journey undertaken in search of some rich mines.

I remember on this subject, that some gentlemen having, by presents, insinuations, and flatteries, come to the knowledge of some treasure by the means of an *Indian*, and prevailed with him at last to guide them to some very rich mines in a remote mountain, he begg'd earnestly of them to be secret, or otherwise he was a dead man, let them take never so much care of him. They promised him accordingly, and so they set out, and he brought them through horrid rocks and precipices, where it look'd as if never man had set his foot, nor scarce any living animal. Every day they met with certain marks, which the *Indian* had told them of beforehand: First, after so many days they discovered a red mountain; and then at certain distance from that a black one on the left-hand; then a valley, which began from a monstrous high mountain or rock; then at so many leagues a mountain of chalk. All which signs the guide went shewing them, verifying thereby the relation he had given them beforehand, and comforting them up to endure the hardship, by the hopes of fulfilling at last their expectation, and seeing their labour rewarded.

Their provisions failed them, and they were forced to come back to provide more, to pursue their enterprize. The *Indian* was always in fear of being discovered, knowing that he run in that no less a hazard than that of his life. They returned then to a town; and to secure their *Indian* from his fright of being discovered, they locked him up in a room very safe; but the night before they were to set out again, without ever being able to discover how it was done, (for there was no signs by the door of any body's going in that way,) as they went to call the *Indian* in the morning, they found him strangled; by which means, being deprived of their intent, and having lost the hopes of satisfying their desire, they returned to their own homes, though with a resolution to try again, being encouraged by so much as they had already discovered.

The other reason to be assign'd for not seeking after these mines, is the great plenty of every thing necessary for life; so that hunger, which is the prompter of covetous desires, being wanting, there are few that care to run a hazard, and lose their conveniences at home, to go through impracticable desarts upon search after hidden treasure; particularly finding already so much in the valleys bottoms, rivers,

VOL. III.

and fountains; nay, even these mines in the low countries are not wrought, because the profit of other products is easier. 'Tis probable that people will increase; for every day there is a new addition; and there then being more consumers, the product of the land will be dearer; and provisions not being so cheap as now, men will be more ingenious and industrious to seek for sustenance under ground, by the mines and treasures hid there by providence.

These few years last past have given beginning to a discovery of some golden mines, and silver ones, on each side of the *Cordillera*: for as I passed over it once, I remember that the sight discovers a black mountain at a distance, whose top shines as if it were covered with silver; and it is a common tradition that it contains it, and great treasures besides, in its bowels; but they are at present useless, for the reasons alledged; and because one half of the year the mountain is covered with snow, and so not only uninhabitable, but impenetrable.

They write me word, that on the side of the province of *Cuyo*, they have begun to discover other very rich mines, which being below the roughest part of the mountain, may be wrought all the year round, and with great convenience of the miners, and other necessary workmen, because carts may come to the very situation of the mine, which is of consideration for the price of the metal. They speak of it with great expectation, by reason of the good proofs they have already had in the assaying of it in small quantities.

Besides the mines of gold, and silver, and brass, and lead, which are work'd in *Coquimbo*, and those of quick-silver, which have been discovered within these few years in *Lamache*, which is a valley in *Chile*, I do not know of any others of any other sort in this *Cordillera*. I am verily persuaded there are some of chrystal; for, considering the nature of the place, I cannot think there is one any where more proper. Being in the valley of *Rancagua*, I heard one of our nation tell an *Indian*, that upwards in the mountain he had found a great deal of chrystal: he hearing this, out of curiosity went up to see what it was; and I heard him tell, that after having gone over several rocks, he saw on the top of a precipice a great opening, and that drawing near to it, he saw a profound cave, and in the bottom of it a great plank or table of chrystal, which appeared to him of the finest sort; but wanting help and instruments to get it out, he returned with only this information, and some little pieces of a chrystal stone which he found on the top.

E

CHAP.

OVALLE.
1646.

Discovery of several very rich mines.

OVALLE.

1646.

C H A P. VII.

Of the Fountains, Rivers, and Brooks of the Cordillera.

Vast number of fountains, springs, brooks, and rivers.

THAT which contributes not a little to the admiration we have for this great chain of mountains, is the vast number of fountains, springs, brooks, and rivers, which we meet with ever and anon, when we go over it: they are so numerous, that 'tis a thing rather to be seen than related, though the travellers reap but little benefit by the curious observation of them; for by them the ways are the most broken and troublesome that 'tis possible to imagine: they last about eight days journey. One must suppose too, that the summer is pretty well enter'd; for in winter they are absolutely impassable, and in the spring not without evident danger of one's life; because one travels all the way on a path so narrow, that there is but just room for a mule's feet. On one side are prodigious precipices, which have at the bottom a furious and profound river; and on the other hand huge rocks, and some part of them standing out so, that if the mule's loading, (as it often happens, and I have seen it,) touches part of them, it throws down the mule headlong, and sends her rowling down till she comes to the river at the bottom, which carries her away to the sea without stopping, except it happen upon some turning of the river to get it on shoar; where, though the landing may be saved, yet not the mule's life, because it is impossible almost to get her up again.

Many places scarcely passable.

In many places one is forced to lide; and even a man on foot is not very safe, because some of the coasts are so streight and slippery, that it frights one to walk on them. The ascents and descents of the hills are so steep, that when from below one looks at those who are above, they look like figures; and for my part I thought it a temerity, if not an impossibility, to venture to get up to them.

Rapid rivers.

The brooks and rivers which cross the ways every step are so violent, that there is no head so strong, but it turns to look on their current; which is so swift, that if it comes up to the mule's saddle, there is no passing without evident danger of one's life; for these streams coming from on high, have the strength of a mill-stream, carrying along with them loose stones, which overturn a loaded mule as it were a chicken; so that 'tis necessary sometimes to stay two or three days till the sun does not shine; for then these brooks are lower, because there is less snow melted: and for this reason 'tis always best to pass early in the

morning, they having had all the night to run lower.

It was necessary for an allay of the dangers and irksomeness of these ways, that God should temper the rigour of the sufferings, by the variety and diversion which so many waters give in their rise and course: some are to be seen breaking out from almost an imperceptible heighth, and meeting with no intermediate object, the whole mass of water, which is usually very great, dissolves itself by the way into so many drops, which make a lovely prospect, like so much pearl falling; and being mingled by the force of the air, which drives them across one upon the other, it seems a chain hanging from its first issue to the earth; where, taking another shape, it becomes a running brook, and unites with the current of the chief river which runs in the middle.

I saw others, which, before they got to the earth, divided into two branches, forming like a thick shower in the midst of the way, or atoms in the sun-beams; but 'tis impossible to paint all the variety of objects produced by these several motions and compositions of streams and fountains. I cannot leave them without mentioning one called the *Eyes of Water*, which is very remarkable; 'tis in the last *mesa* but one, at the foot of the mountain. I called it *mesa*, because providence has, for the relief of travellers, disposed, at some leagues distance, little valleys and agreeable plains, which ease the travellers in this most tedious and long ascent.

This valley is environed with a wall of most prodigious high rocks; it may be a mile or thereabouts in its diameter, and is all the year round full of greens, odoriferous plants and flowers, which make it a picture of paradise: in the midst of it springs up this fountain, or fountains, because the springs of water are many that rise from the ground all about, leaping with great force into the air, which in a little space all unite, and make two great bodies, each of them full of water, as clear as chrystal. These two heads begin a kind of combat a little below, and mingling in their course with one another, as if some ingenious artist had ordered it, make a great many turnings and windings, sometimes far from one another, and sometimes united through the whole valley, till at the end of it, joining together, they fall into one canal, which empties itself into the principal river, composed by many of these rivulets.

One

*The waters
extream
cold.*

One property of all these chrystal streams, is extream coolness, which they never lose, no, not when the sun shines out most in the heat of the day; it is such, that no body can drink half a cup full of it without resting, or taking breath; and though all these springs have this quality, yet none in so intense a degree as this fountain of *Los ojos de aqua*; of which, though the weather be never so hot, 'tis not possible to drink above two or three sips; and one can hardly endure to hold the water in one's hand above a minute.

Behind one of those high mountains which is to the east of this fountain, there is a great lake or pond, so deep and clear, that it appears as if it were of azure; and there is a tradition, that the last of the *Ingas*, kings of *Peru*, caused vast quantities of treasure to be thrown into it, when he saw that he could not redeem himself, nor save his life by them; though it seems hard to believe they should go so far to do a thing they might have executed much nearer home. The waters of this lake have no issue, being environed on all sides with very high rocks, and therefore 'tis thought that it comes under ground to those fountains called the *Ojos de aqua*, and empties itself by them.

I cannot pass over in silence another fountain which is at the foot of the *Cordillera*, on the other side towards *Cuyo*. There is a river called the *Rio de Mendoza*, which comes down from the east, not inferior to that of *Aconagua* in *Chile*, which runs to the west into the south sea. Into these two rivers are emptied most of the little streams of the mountain; that of *Mendoza* meeting in its way with a chalky mountain, bores it quite through, and leaves a bridge broad enough for three or four carts to pass a-breast. Under this bridge is a great table of rock, over which run five different streams of water, proceeding from so many fountains; which water is extream hot, and very good for many distempers. The stones over which it runs are of a green, like emerald. The vault of this bridge surpasses in beauty all that human art can produce; for there hang down from it several icicles, in shapes of flowers, and pendants of a stone like salt; for the humidity which penetrates from above, makes it congeal like points of diamonds, and

other figures, which adorn this vault; through which there falls perpetually a quantity of great drops, as big as pease some, and others as big as yolks of eggs; which falling upon the stone table I have mentioned, are turned into stones of several shapes and colours, of no small value.

There is another bridge on the other side, call'd the *Inga's* bridge, either because he caus'd it to be built, or because (as is more probable) his generals were the first discoverers of it, and pass'd over it; for it is not possible that any human art could make so bold an attempt as has been brought to pass by the author of nature in this place. This bridge is form'd by a most prodigious high rock, which is cloven in two, as if it had been sawed down, only cover'd on top: it is hollow to the very river, which is large and rapid, and yet the noise of it is no more heard on the top, than if it were a little brook; which is a strong argument of the great distance there is between the top and the bottom of the mountain; for the opening not being above eight foot over, it being easy to leap from one side to the other, it would be thought, that a great river being so streightened as to go through it, should make a very great noise in passing such a streight place with so much force; and if the noise does not reach the ear, 'tis because of the great distance. I myself have gone to the side of this bridge, and look'd down, (though with great horror, for it strikes a shivering into one, to contemplate such a depth, than which I have not seen a more terrible one;) I not only did not hear any noise, but that great river appear'd a little brook, hardly to be discern'd.

These are the entertainments for the eye in passing this part of the *Cordillera*: as for the many others which may be met with in so vast an extent, who can relate them? I believe there are those who know much more than what I have here describ'd, which is only what I have seen; but from so little 'tis easy to infer more; for if only the rise of two rivers have afforded such matter of admiration, what may not be produced in the birth and course of so many others, as we shall describe in the following chapter?

CHAP. VIII.

Of the vast Number of Rivers which take their Rise in this Mountain, and empty themselves into the Sea.

THE great author of nature has founded the best part of the beauty and fecundity of the fields of *Chile* in this

J

range of mountains call'd the *Cordillera*, in which, as in a bank that can never break, he has deposited its treasure and riches, by assuring

OVALLE.
1646.

*The Inga's
bridge.*

*Rio de
Mendoza.*

OVALLE, 1646. assuring the annual tribute of so many brooks and ample rivers which are to fertilize the earth; for neither can the country maintain its fertility without such moisture, nor such a moisture maintain it self all the year without such quantities of snow, as are laid up in the deep hollows of it in the winter, to feed in the summer the many rivers that are derived from it.

Who can demonstrate the number of them at their rise? But one may guess at the prodigious quantity of snow which supplies them; for though it cannot be seen all in a mass, because its reservoirs are impenetrable, yet its effects do manifest it; for besides the feeding of innumerable rivers which run to the east, and empty themselves into the north sea, and supplying prodigious lakes in the province of *Cuyo*, those which run to the west, and enter the south-sea, (not reckoning what may be by the straits of *Magellan*, and the *Tierra del Fuego*,) are above fifty, which may be well multiplied by four a-piece more which they receive, and so make two hundred; which arrive at the sea so full and deep, that some of them have water enough for the navigation of the galleons and ships of great burden; which is the more to be admir'd, because their course is so short, the most extended of them not passing thirty leagues in length.

The Salt River.

The first river of this kingdom, beginning from the confines of *Peru* about the 25th degree of latitude, is the river called the *Salt River*, which comes from the *Cordillera*, running through a deep valley: its waters are so salt, that they cannot be drank; and when sometimes horses, deceived by its pure clear colours, happen to drink of them, they are turned into salt by the heat of the sun, so that the bodies seem of pearl, they beginning to petrify by the tail.

Copiapo.

The next to this is the river of *Copiapo*, in 26 degrees; it runs twenty leagues from east to west, and makes a bay at its entrance into the sea, which serves for a harbour for ships. In 28 degrees the river of *Guafo* does the same, and forms a port.

Guafo.
Coquimbo.

After this comes the river of *Coquimbo* in 30 degrees, whose port is a noble bay adorn'd on the shore with fresh and beautiful myrtles, and other trees, which continue within land as far as the town, and make a noble and pleasant grove, which out-does all the contrivances of art. There are fish'd in this coast tunny-fish, *albucores*, and many sorts of excellent fish, as also oysters, and great variety of shell-fish.

Tongoy and Limari.

The next to the river of *Coquimbo* are those of *Tongoy* and *Limari* about 30 degrees and a half east: and then in 31 degrees the river of *Chuapa* empties itself into the sea. Upon that coast there is found

Chuapa.

a sort of delicate shell-fish, which they call *jacas*.

Between the one and thirtieth degree, and the two and thirtieth, the rivers *Longo-* *Longotoma*, *toma* and *La Liga* enter the sea; and about thirty three degrees that of *Aconcagua*, *La Liga*, and *Aconcagua*, which is the great river which comes down, as we have said, by the way of the *Cordillera*. This is a very deep river; and though it runs through the large valleys of *Curimon*, *Aconcagua*, *Quilota*, and *Concon*, which being cultivated with all kinds of products, particularly wheat, flax, hemp, &c. and by consequence well water'd, yet this river arrives at the sea as full and deep as if they had not drained it by the way to fertilize their fields.

About thirty three and a half, follows the famous river *Maypo*, which I cannot tell whether it be more famous for its good qualities, or for the danger and difficulty of passing it, many having been drowned in it, and every day miscarrying by it. It is of so rapid a current, and sometimes swells so high, that no bridge can resist its fury, but it is carried away by it; for which reason, at this day it has no other but one of many cables join'd together, and lying a-cross from one side to the other. Its waters are ordinarily thick; and it enters the sea with so much force, that it makes its way in it distinct for a good while; its waters are perfectly known from those of the sea by a circle they make: they are besides very cold, and yet it quenches thirst but ill, for it is brackish, which makes the flesh of the sheep which feed near it, to be excellent in taste. There are fish'd here also most excellent fish, particularly trouts; esteem'd all over the country.

There falls into this river, among others, that of *St. Fago*, otherwise called the *St. Fago*, river of *Mapocho* which is divided into several streams, to water the district of that city; and it does it sometimes more than we could wish, when it overflows. Not far from the city, it hides itself under ground, leaving a bridge of two or three leagues over it, while it maintains a silent course underneath; at the end of this space it comes out in bubbles among a grove of cherry trees, with its waters as clear and purified as chrystal; so that though it seems to hide it self, and die, it is only to spring up again more beautiful and stately, being of a stronger current, before it is again spread and diffused to fertilize the fields. At this place of its second birth, there stands an ancient and illustrious convent of *St. Francis*, which, because it is within sight of a vast forest of trees, is called *St. Francis of the Mountain*, in which there have been, from time

time to time, most holy men of the first founders in that province, and who employ themselves in the worship of God, and help of their neighbours, with great zeal and reputation of their order.

river fish, which is so sweet and healthy, OVALLE. 1646. that it is used to be given to the sick and convalescent.

Poangué. The river of *Poangué*, which falls likewise into *Maypo*, runs also many leagues under ground: this cannot rise with more advantages than at its first fountain; for its waters are, at the very source, so clear, delicate, and sweet, that they cannot be mended; it has not its original like all the rest from snow water, but from minerals of gold, through whose veins it makes its way, as if it had an aqueduct of that precious metal: its course is border'd on each side with most beautiful trees, which contribute to make its waters wholesome: they are indeed of themselves a remedy; for they help digestion so visibly, that if any one has exceeded and eat more than his stomach can well embrace, one draught of this water will relieve him, so that he shall be hungry again in a little time. Neither is it useless under ground; for while it is there, it communicates it self to the whole valley by subterranean conduits: the effect of which is visible; for though in the summer it does not rain a drop, and the valley has no other watering, yet it brings as seasonable a crop, and as relishing fruit, as any other that has the help of rain and other irrigations; neither have I seen any where larger or more delicious melons, nor more abounding and well grown maiz, than in this valley.

After *Maypo*, is the river of *Rapel*, not Rapel, at all inferior to the other; it enters the Cachapoal, sea about the 34th degree, and as many minutes; about four or five leagues before the two famous rivers of *Cachapoal* and *Tinguirica* join together, and are no less in debt to mankind for the many people they have swallowed, than that of *Maypo*. Among others which increase their rapid current, are the rivers *Mallua* and *Cham-Mallua and Chambaronigo.* on the banks of this the order of the *Redemption* has a convent, for the instruction and edification of all that country. The *Jesuites* have also a novitiate, who have for neighbours a monastery of *St. Dominick*. The lands thereabouts are extream fertile, have excellent pastures for the fattening of cattle, and are much valued all over the country. In thirty four degrees and three quarters is the river *Delora*, which receives those of *Teno*, Delora, *Peterroa*, and *Metaquito*, whose stream is Teno, Peterroa, and Metaquito. so rapid, that many perish in it. These rivers water most rich lands, and a delicious country for the breeding and feeding of all sorts of cattle; and indeed there is not a foot of ground unemployed in them.

The great *Maule* appears at thirty five The Maule. degrees; and it makes the limits of the archbishoprick and jurisdiction of the city of *St. Jago*: all that was inclosed between this and *Rapel*, *Cachapoal*, and *Tinguirica*, was called by the natural *Indians* Promo-mocaes. *Promo-mocaes*, that is, a place of dancing and delight, to express the pleasantness of that country. They were not out in this character at all: I remember once, that travelling in this country, when I came to a farm of any *Spaniard*, he would entertain me with nothing but the praises of it, and that with so many particulars, that I could not imagine it could be out-done by any in the world; but when I came to another farm, the master of it would relate to me such admirable properties of his, that the first seemed but ordinary to me. Thus I found every one so in love with the spot he lived on, that I could not but admire the whole, and have a great idea of the excellency and temperament of this land, as well as of its provisions. Partridge are abounding, and all manner of game; and as for fish, there are such quantities of smelts and trouts, that they take them when they will, being as sure almost to catch them, as if they had them in ponds at home. I have heard them often say, that when they were sat down to table, if any one longed for a fresh trout, they had no more to do, than to send and

De Colina and Lampa, make the famous lake of Cudaguel. There are two other rivers which fall into *Maypo*, which are call'd *De Colina* and *Lampa*; which uniting together about ten or twelve leagues from their first rise, make the famous lake of *Cudaguel* so profound and deep, that great ships might swim in it: this lake is about two leagues long, all bordered with delicate willow trees, and other greens, which keep their freshness and greenness all the year round; and, that nothing may be wanting to its agreeableness, it is full of excellent trouts and *vagres*, which sometimes are so plentiful, that they are easily caught; and this uses to be one of the greatest diversions of the citizens of the city of *St. Jago*. There are other lakes, as those of *Aculco*, which empty themselves into this river of *Maypo*, on the contrary side to that of the clear river: there are also bred in it, smelts of above a foot long; the very name in *Spanish* declaring their excellency, it signifying a royal fish: some years there are such plenty of them, that the whole city may keep *Lent* with them alone, without buying any other fish from the sea; which, though it is very good, yet it never attains to the delicacy of the

OVALLE. catch one, which they would have ready dressed before they rise from the table. The river *Maule* receives the clear river, and that of *Cauquenes*; and though it be as deep again as either of them, yet it is less dangerous for passengers, and fewer people are drowned in it; because near the sea, by the yard for building of ships, it spreads itself, and makes a large passage, where the king has a ferry for the conveniency of passengers. The *Austin* friars have also a convent here, and take care of the *Spaniards*; and their black and *Indian* servants, who people all the banks of this river, and are numerous, living in separate farms all along the country: these they call *Estancias*.

City of the Conception. Now we enter the jurisdiction of the city of the *Conception*, where the governor resides; and there is a garrison of the militia. The bishoprick of the city of *Imperial* begins also at this river, which has for next and immediate neighbour the peaceable and noble river of *Itata*, three times as large, and as deep as the *Maule*, and enters the sea at about thirty six degrees: its course is among rocks, and so is less useful to the land, because it cannot water it: They pass it upon rafts, and there are also fords in some places. About the middle of its course, the furious torrent called *Nuble* joins it: this washes the walls of the city of *St. Bartholomew* of *Cbillan*, an ancient garrison of the *Spaniards*, and a singular proof of their bravery and fidelity.

Bay of the Conception. Immediately next to this river is the spacious and agreeable bay of the *Conception*, into which the slow and silent river of *Andalien* empties itself at thirty six degrees and three quarters. There is another small river which passes through the middle of the city, having first precipitated itself from a high rock, and affording matter to the industry of the inhabitants, for all sorts of water-works among pleasant groves of laurels, and myrtles, and other odoriferous plants which adorn its banks; and as it falls from so high, it invites the industrious planters to contrive mills for the sustenance of the city; of which there are already a great many.

Biobio. Two leagues further from this bay, in the thirty seventh degree, the so-much celebrated *Biobio* enters the sea. It is the most powerful river of all *Chile*: it has at its entrance two or three miles in breadth, more or less, according as it swells or shrinks, which is a great deal, considering its short course: but that is not the chief thing which makes it famous, and deserve so much praise; it is its wholesome waters; for (besides the particular excellency they may acquire, by passing through veins of gold, which nevertheless many other rivers of this

country have too,) it has a singular advantage, by a small river which falls into it; which river, taking its rise and course among *Sarzaparilla* roots, communicates to the other its virtue and good qualities, and makes it a cure for many infirmities. There is a tradition, That at the source of this river there were most rich mines, work'd before ever the *Spaniards* came into these parts. Upon this information, *Don Alonso de Sottomayor*, president of the country, sent a band of soldiers to view them, as they did; though as they came back, they were laid wait for by the *Indians*, our enemies, and had a smart engagement with them, and had much ado to escape with their lives. This *Indian* people do always as much as they can to hide from the *Europeans* the treasures and riches of their country, as it has been said already.

This river is the bounds which divides the *Spaniards* and our *Indian* friends from the *Indian* enemies: in winter the river overflows so, that all the fords are unpassable; and so the soldiers may take some repose till the spring, at which time they are to begin their inroads again. The enemy on his side has no garrison, nor place of strength; for they trust to their mountains, to which they can retire at any time: but the *Spaniards* have many garrisons all along the river, with which they bridle and keep in awe the potent rage of their proud enemy, who alone has given them more trouble than all the rest of *America*.

Their chief forts, besides the cities of the *Conception* and *Cbillan*, are those of *Arauco* and *St. Philip*, in which there are generally about sixteen hundred natural *Spaniards*, besides the *Indian* allies, who are numerous. The first of these is upon the sea-side, and the other nearer the *Cordillera*. There are others between on each side of the river, and some pretty far into the enemies country. I can name nine of these forts; which are, that of *St. Angel*, of the *Nativity*, of *St. Ann*, of *St. Rosendo*, of *Good Hope*, of *Talmacabuida*, of *St. Peter*, of *Colcuta*, and that of *Levo*. These are all provided with great guns, and a sufficient number of soldiers; and at such proportionable distances from each other, that they can soon receive notice of what is necessary to be known from the first to the last by the cannon-shot, according as it may have been concerted beforehand.

The company of *Jesús* has here two residencies, one in *Arauco*, and the other in the fort of *Good Hope*; from whence they also make their attempts, not against the bodies, but to save the souls of their enemies, engaging with hell itself, and obtaining over it daily and glorious victories, as it

shall

shall be told in its proper place; for now we must follow the description already begun of the rivers of *Cbile*.

Colcura,
Arauco,
Lavapie,
and Levo.

Ralemo, or
Coypo.

Imperial.

Ladies
River.

After *Biobio* follow four others much inferior to it: they are the rivers of *Colcura*, *Arauco*, *Lavapie*, and *Levo*, which empties itself near the thirty eighth degree; and a little further, that of *Ralemo*, which, a little from its source, is called *Coypo*, in near thirty nine degrees. The pleasant and peaceful river of the *Imperial* enters the sea, having first incorporated with its stream, the river called the *Ladies River*, because of the delicacy of its waters and quiet current. More above, nearer its source, it receives

the two rivers of *Curarava* and *Eyow*, ^{OVALLE. 1646.} which, before they meet to enter the river *Imperial*, form the much-celebrated lake of *Puren*, a most unconquerable fortress of the *Indians*, who are more secure in it, than the *Spaniards* in any of theirs. ^{Curarava and Eyow form the lake of Puren.}

About half a degree beyond the river *Cauren*, which is the same as the *Imperial*, the river *Tolten* pays its tribute to the sea, ^{Tolten.} and is deep enough for great ships. About eight leagues further the river *Queule* does ^{Queule.} the same; which, though small, yet receives barks in it, and is about nine leagues upon a north and south line from the famous river of *Valdivia*.

CH A P. IX.

Of the famous Port and River of Valdivia.

THE river and port of *Valdivia*, never enough commended by foreign writers, and no less admired by those who have seen it, had its name from *Pedro de Valdivia*, first governor and conqueror of *Cbile*. It is, as it were, in the centre of the whole kingdom, at almost forty degrees latitude, south-west from *Seville* in *Spain*; upon a plain map one thousand nine hundred and seventy leagues, measured by the heavens. The sun is five hours, and a third part of an hour, in going from the meridian of *Sevilla*, to the meridian of *Valdivia*; so that when it is noon at *Seville*, 'tis in *Valdivia* fix a-clock and forty minutes in the morning. Its longest day is of fourteen hours, or thereabouts.

Description
of the river
of Valdivia.

This river has its opening to the north; and because of the depth of its waters, great ships can go up to the very city, which is two or three leagues from the sea: when they are there, they can lie so near the shoar, as with a plank to go in and out, and take in and unlade their cargo, without the help of boats. There is just over-against the city, a fine island, called the *Island of Constantine*, with two little ones, one before, and the other behind the island. The river is navigable on both sides the island; but because the south branch has more depth, the great ships come in that way, and the lesser by the north branch.

There are two high points of land, like rocks, which mark the entrance of this river; the biggest is to the north, and is called *Bonifacio's Hill*; the south is lesser, and is called *Gonzalo's Hill*. When one is entered some way up the river, there is another streighter passage, which is the key of the port, or rather ports, because there are many harbours within. This entrance has also two hills, which come so near each other, that I have heard a captain, who was sent to sound the river, relate, That in

the middle he was within musket-shot of either hill; the south one is called *Morro de los Mançanos*, and the opposite *Morro de Niera*: so that, according to this account, there might be an iron chain laid from the one to the other, with which, and two forts raised on each side, the entrance would be made impenetrable.

As soon as this streight is passed, there ^{The port.} is on the south side a noble port; for though all the river may be called so, for the quietness of its water, yet this is more advantageously situated, by being covered with the mountains of the land: 'tis called the port of the *Corral*: it forms a bay capable of receiving great fleets. When you have passed this port, there appears the first island; between which and the land on the south-side, there are many shoals and sands; wherefore the ships take the north-side, and go between this island and the great one; and then follow their course up to the city, by the channel of the great island. The lesser vessels may keep the other side of the island.

Besides all these good qualities, this port has other advantages from the land, by the fertility of the country, which produces corn, and fruits of all kinds, except grapes, which do not ripen here so well as in other parts of *Cbile*, from which wine is brought to these parts: but it has great plenty of beef and mutton, fowls and venison. It has also wood for the building of shipping; and that which is above all, it has the richest mines of the finest gold in *Cbile*; and in all *America* there is none comes up to it, but the gold of *Carabaya*.

This is the account of *Antonio de Herrera*. He adds, That there was an *Indian*, who had every day a revenue of twenty five or thirty *Pesos* of gold; which being observed by the governor *Valdivia*, he sent the *Adelantado Hyeronimo de Alderate* to *Spain*, to inform his catholick majesty of the

OVALLE. the great riches of the kingdom of *Chile*,
 1646. that his majesty might make the more esteem of it ; and to invite foreigners to come and people the country, and help him to conquer it, he sent some *Spaniards* by land, whose stirrups, breast-plates, and all that use to be of iron about a horse, were of fine gold ; and that, not satisfied with this, he had resolved to go in person, to inform his majesty, and obtain from him the confirmation of his government : to which end he employed twenty thousand *Indians* to bring him gold, designing to embark and sail through the streights of *Magellan*, if death had not prevented him.

1552. This city was founded by the governor *Valdivia* in the year 1552. upon a high rising, but plain side of a hill, and above the rest of the country.

Recloma, a famous Indian lady.

The famous *Indian* lady *Recloma* was very instrumental in helping towards its conquest and foundation. The story was thus : The *Spanish* forces were come to this river, conquering the country all the way before them ; but here the *Indians* not being willing to let foreigners settle in their country, took up arms, and making the river serve for their defence, hindered the progress of *Valdivia*, and gave him great trouble. But he being a man of great courage, was not daunted by this resistance, but endeavoured to pass the river to engage the enemy.

Upon this occasion, this brave *Indian* lady, either inspired by heaven, or touched by compassion of so much blood as must be shed on both sides, in the rencounter, offered the governor, that she alone would gain him the victory, without any other force, than that of her eloquence and courageous mind. *Stay here, says she, and go no further ; for I will put all this province into thy hands, and will make thee this day, lord of all that thy eyes can discover. Stay for my return here, and do not suffer any of thy soldiers to pass on a step further.* The governor promised to do so ; and, upon his word and promise of good treatment to the *Indians* who should submit to his god and his king, she threw herself into the water, and, in the presence of them all, swam the river. When she was landed, she desired audience of the general of the *Indians* : to whom she delivered her message with so much force of eloquence, that they submitting to her reasons, promised to accept of what terms should be given them. With this the famous *Recloma* returned to the *Spaniards*, singing victory, laying at their feet the richest prize they could wish ; and such a one, as after much time, expence, and bloodshed in the conquest of it, they would have thought themselves well paid to be masters of such a country, whose golden mines they presently began to work : by which

j

means the city increased so fast, that if the devil had not troubled the peace, and caused the rebellion of the *Indians*, which ruined it, it had been one of the first and best cities of the *Indies*.

The *Hollanders*, our enemies, are well informed of the nature of the country, and the excellency of the port, and do all they can to get possession of it ; but our favour, who by his grace has hitherto preserved those countries free from herefy and its corruption, will not permit, that this *Hydra* of hell shall infect that air with its venomous breath, nor breed a contagion in the purity of its faith, which is propagated so sincere and true in the hearts of those new christians.

This has been proved by the success of a fleet of theirs in the year 1643. when these rebellious pirates passed the streights of *Magellan*, with a design to settle at *Valdivia* ; for though in effect they did people the place, having first passed by the islands of *Chiloe*, where our company has so many glorious missions ; in which they threw down the altars and the crosses, and committed other enormities proper to their impiety and obstinacy, yet at last they came off no laughers, but had reason to lament rather. The same befel another of their generals, called *Antonio Sivaestro*, many of his fleet being taken prisoners, and thirty of them hung up by the feet, as is related by their own authors, *John* and *Theodore de Brye*.

But in this second occasion, they paid yet more severely for their attempt ; for in the very same island, where they had committed all these disorders, God took the life of the general, punishing his unhappy soul with the due chastisement of such an undertaking. They lost the ship which carried their provisions, their ammunition, thirty pieces of artillery, all the brick and lime, and other materials for building three forts, which they had orders to raise in the river of *Valdivia*, and on the island of *Constantine* in that river ; and having afterwards got to *Valdivia*, and begun to people, their new general, whose name was *Elvis Aramans*, was forced to shut up all his people in the island of *Constantine*, because they run from him continually, and forsook him ; besides the prisoners made in the islands of *Chiloe*, and others destroyed by us, and the warlike *Indians*.

In short, God having espoused this cause as his own, they were tormented with hunger ; and before the *Spaniards*, who were on their way, could come up to them, their own diseases and losses obliged them to weigh anchor, and be gone. This was their wisest course ; for if they had staid till the fleet from *Peru* had come up to them, and the land forces from *Chile* had attacked them,

them, they had not gone off so well; for the marquis of *Manfiera* being so good a soldier himself, and so zealous for god and his king, immediately, upon the first news of their arrival, had set out ten sail, which he provided with powder and ammunition, and dispatched them to give advice along the coast; then he prepared a navy, which was to be of 16 gallions and ships, and 4000 *Spaniards*, resolving to go in person, or at least to send his son.

The governor of *Chile*, the marquis of *Baydes*, with his accustomed vigilancy and readiness in things, where the service of god and the king are concerned, and as a captain of that valour and experience, which he shewed in *Flanders*, was ready to enter by land, after having provided all the ports of the kingdom with the army kept on foot by his majesty; so that if the *Hollander* had had yet more force than he had, being so hard pressed both by sea and land, he must either have relinquished the port, or perished there for ever.

It has been seen in this occasion, that one man is as good as many in the defence of the cause of god and their country, against any invader whatsoever, every one despising all dangers on such an account; but particularly colonel *de Villa Nueva Soberal* signalized himself at this time; for being general of the kingdom, and governor of the country of *Arauco*, he ventured himself in a small bark in the midst of winter, to sollicite at *Lima* the necessary succours, and assist the vice-roy for a more quick dispatch of all things.

He took with him father *Domingo Lazaro*, of the company of *Jesús*, that he might inform him as an eye-witness of all that had passed, he being at that time employed in *Chiloe*, in the apostolical missions when the *Hollanders* landed: he, ne-

vertheless, with undaunted courage, embarked in the midst of the winter in a tempestuous sea, as it is at that time; and without apprehension of all those dangers, and of being made a prisoner by the *Hollanders*, who lay in his way, and could scarce be avoided, he arrived at the city of the *Conception*, where he gave an account of all that had happened; by which means the country was immediately prepared, and in arms for their defence.

There is another action which ought not to be concealed, as well because it shews the great prudence of the marquis *de Baydes*, as the courage of 20 *Spanish* soldiers. It being uncertain whether the enemy were still at *Valdivia*, or whether he had abandoned it, they offered to go in a boat up the river, as they did by the governor's command; and without being terrified by the manifest danger they exposed themselves to, they went as high as the town; and having discovered the ill condition of the enemy, and his design of leaving the place, they returned with that advice. This moved the general not to attack them, as was at first resolved; but it did not hinder his intention of peopling the place, (as I believe was done last summer;) for I have advice from *Panama*, that there is a garrison of 600 *Spaniards* left there; to which our *Indian* friends being joined, (and the coast *Indians* also,) that post will be henceforward inexpugnable, and by it the south-sea will be secured; for it being already so dangerous to sail through the streights, and so easy for us who are at home to defend this post of *Valdivia*, and having all the land our friends, we receive succours both from the *Spaniards* and *Indians*, who are so friendly, that their caciques sent to offer their assistance of their own accord against the *Hollanders*; I say it will be very hard henceforward for anyone to give us any disturbance:

OVALLE.
1646.

CHAP. X.

A Continuation of the Description of the Rivers of Chile, and particularly of those which run to the East; and of the Difference between the one and the other Side of the Great Cordillera.

Chalbin.

THE river next to that of *Valdivia* is that which is called *Chalbin*; it is deep, and capable of great vessels. From this river, to a place called the *Punta de Galera*, 'tis about two leagues; and from this to *Rio Bueno* seven; into which fall five rivers more, and one which is beyond the bounds of *Valdivia*.

Rio Chico.

After this is the *Rio Chico*, which comes from a lake at the foot of the *Cordillera*; in which lake are baths to cure leprosy and other infirmities. Next to this is the *Rio de*

la Ballena, which is close to the cape of that *De la Ballena*, so call'd because of a whale of prodigious bigness, which died upon that coast. After this, you come to the *Archipelago* of islands, into which falls the river call'd *De los Rabudos*, because of an *Indian* nation of that name, so call'd, because 'tis said they are born with tails, as father *Gregory* of *Leon* describes them in his map. More on to the south is the river *De los Coronados*, named so by the company of a ship which put in there on the day of the forty martyrs so called.

The river
De los Co-
ronados.

OVALLE. 1646. After these there are many rivers all along the coast; the first is called *De la Esperanza*, or of hope, because of the wishes, that one day the light of the gospel may reach to those parts by means of the ministers of it. The second is called *Rio sin fundo*, or the river without a bottom, because of the great depth of it. The third is called the *Gallegos*, from a Spaniard of that name who sail'd along those coasts, and like another *Icarus*, gave his name to one of them, by being drown'd in the sea hard by it, at a cape which has the same name. Then follow the rivers *De los Martyres*, and *De los Apostoles*; and immediately after them two others: the first has no name, the second is called *De los Gigantes*, or of the Gyants, because here they were begun to be seen, and they reach all along the *Streights*. The famous river call'd *De la Campana*, enters at a place named *El Ancon sin salida*: this name was given to the river, because its two arms seem to form the shape of a bell. There are two rivers more before you come to the *Streights*, to wit, that of *De los Pajaros*, or of birds, by reason of the vast quantity of them that were upon it, in that part which comes towards the *Streights*; and the other, of *St. Victorian*, called so from the opening, to which the same saint gives its name. As for the other rivers which run among the islands, and those which empty themselves into the *Streights*, they are many, and shall be described in their proper places.

Hitherto we have described the rivers of most renown of this long extended kingdom, which run from east to west, and empty themselves into the *South-Sea*: those which run from the opposite part of the *Cordillera*, towards the north-sea, are not so well known, because those parts are less inhabited, at least, by such as can give us a good account of them. The most remarkable of them are those of *St. John* and of *Mendoza*, which are very large rivers, and empty themselves into the famous lake of *Guanacache*.

The governor *Hieronimo Lewis de Cabrera*, a gentleman of great valour and merit, met with several great rivers in his passage over those vast plains call'd the *Pampas*, where, as at sea, people are fain to travel by the compass, not to lose themselves: he was in quest of a nation call'd the *Cessates*, of whom we shall treat hereafter in its proper place. They were forc'd to pass many great rivers, and without doubt there are many more as far as the *Pole*.

Nevertheless I am perswaded, that these rivers do not equal those which run opposite, and enter the sea on the coast of *Chile*; and this may be clearly gathered from the

difference which may be observ'd in passing the *Cordillera*, between each side of the mountain, which is so great, that they seem two different worlds, the east and west parts; and one would think heaven had put these mountains to divide them as a wall, and keep off from the west, all the storms and ill weather of the east, where are the provinces of *Cuyo* and *Tucuman*, not to disturb the serenity and tranquility of *Chile* and the western parts. Any one that travels to the top of the high chain of mountains, may experience this clearly; for there he discovers both horizons, and when he looks to the east, all is cover'd with gross vapours, which seem to hinder the light, and shadow all the country; and at the same time looking west, the heaven is so christalline and bright, that it causes pleasure and joy to look on it. The east side is full of a cloudy, thick air, which engenders storms and hail, with horrible thunders and lightnings, which fright all the inhabitants: on the other side, in the west, there is not a cloud to be seen, but clear and bright, as if in the heavens themselves there were such a partition as the *Cordillera* to divide the climates, as that upon earth does produce a difference in the trees, plants, and animals on each side.

A curious observer contemplating once, from this height, this so remarkable difference, said, That nature, in the fabric of this part of the world, seem'd to have turn'd her back upon the eastern provinces, and look'd with her face only upon *Chile*, giving blessings with both hands to this last, and leaving the other, as it were, disinherited, and grieving at the pre-eminencies of its elder brother. In going down to the eastward there are fewer fountains and rivers, and those muddy, the face of the land melancholy, without so much as one green tree to recreate the sight, nor any pleasant verdure; and when at last there is some, as in the valley of *Uspallata*, the heats begin to be so intolerable, that all things seem afflicting and unkind. On the other side, when we go to the west, 'tis quite contrary; for as soon as we begin to descend, we meet with lovely springs; the trees are green, the groves frequent and pleasant, and the little valleys, which are like so many resting places in that great stair-case, where passengers take breath, and are refresh'd with the verdure and flowers of them, the air still grows purer and purer; and the more they come down, the more they leave behind them all the inclemencies of the climate of the other side, enjoying the advantages of the temperate *Chile*; for from the very foot of the mountains one feels the mildness of the sea air, and

one

one is rejoic'd with the harmony of the birds, and other delightful objects, so as to forget the trouble and danger of the way one has pass'd.

There is the same difference in the very land at the foot of the mountains; for on the east side there are few fountains; the land is barren, and little cultivated; neither are there flocks of any kind either fed or bred, so that the fields look like a useless barren ground, except it be that the thinness of the people has not as yet given way to try the fertility of the earth; for the plains below these are extremely fertile, where they are cultivated; but at present there is nothing but thorns and barren dryness in those parts.

'Tis not so to the west, where fountains break out continually, which in the winter are temperate, and in the summer as cold as ice, and that so much the more as the weather grows hotter and hotter. These springs do so fertilize the fields at the foot of the mountains, that they keep the earth fresh and green all the year, though it be but a patch; for most of the ground is woody, and there is such variety of wild trees, that one would think they were arbors and groves planted by the hand of man: many of these are loaded with fruits of the country, of which the *Indians* make

excellent drinks, and some of them are very good to eat. The valleys are full of odoriferous beautiful flowers, brought forth by nature, without any human industry: there are also among them most extraordinary physical plants of a beautiful aspect. The little hills and plains afford excellent pasture for all sorts of cattle and flocks; there are also admirable valleys for planting of olives and almond-trees, and all sorts of fruit-trees. At the lower part, about a league in the plain, there are vineyards, of which are made excellent wines, particularly muscadels, which are in great esteem.

There are likewise in this descent of the mountain, admirable pastures, where great flocks are bred, and do increase wonderfully; their flesh is extremely savory, and the milk of the goats is so fat, that by only boiling and stirring it gently over the fire, I have seen it grow as thick as if flower had been put into it; and yet in other parts this milk is of its nature very thin. This may be said particularly of the young she-goats; and the milk thus boil'd has a sweetness and delicacy which passes ordinary milk, even with the things that are put in to mend it; all which are arguments of the great substance and nourishment of that land.

CHAP. XI.

Of the Effects produced by the great Snow of the Cordillera.

Great
snows.

WITH the first rains of the winter, which are about the middle of *May*, the *Cordillera* begins to be cover'd with snow, and to put on, as it were, a white armour, to hinder its being pass'd, not only by men, but even by animals and birds, which are so driven out of it by the rigour of that season, that there is not one remaining in it.

Intolerable
cold.

Even the *Silguerillos* and *Sorfales*, birds which of their own nature are so hot, that in the very beginning of the summer they take to the mountain, as soon as they perceive that the winter draws near, come in flocks down to avoid its rigour in the mountains; and then it is that the taking of them is easy, and that as soon as the cold pinches, the ground being almost cover'd with them, it proves the season of most pleasure for the youth of the country, who going out, take so many of them, either with glue or nets, that they carry loads of them home, reserving those of the finest colours to put in cages, for their harmony is very sweet. The *Cordillera* is shut up five or six months in the year; so that till *October* or *November*, it cannot be pass'd

without manifest danger of one's life; and in the midst of winter not at all, because all the paths and ways are cover'd with snow, to the height of many yards; and if any one should be rash enough to attempt it, he would after a little going, sink in every where, so that he would not be able to go a step forward nor backward, as has happened to several, who either for some very pressing concern and interest, or flying from a death which threaten'd them for their crimes, have found it in these desarts more certainly than perhaps they would have done in the prisons where they fear'd it.

These are buried, not in sepulchres whitened on the outside, nor under cold marble, but in the very bosom of frost and snow, which preserves them without being imbalm'd, and yet keeps them as incorruptible and dry, for so they have been found after many years; for such is the cold of those mountains, that it dries up all the moisture that can cause corruption in dead bodies, and so preserves them.

This so insuperable difficulty of passing the *Cordillera*, is less at the entrance, than the end of the winter, because the drifts of snow

OVALLE. 1646. snow are not then so violent as to shut up the ways entirely; so in those seasons some do venture to pass, though never but with great danger, and upon urgent occasions: if sometimes they are so lucky as to get off well, because they meet with a clear sky, yet at other times it costs them dear; and always 'tis with infinite labour that they get thorough.

I have seen others who escaped with their lives by god's mercy, because the storm catch'd them before they were too far engaged in the mountain, and so they could yet make a retreat to the low countries; others have been forc'd to open their mules bellies that they ride on, and hide themselves in them; and by that warmth, and other defence of cloaths, they make a shift to get over the storm of snow, if it does not last long; after which they gain the plains on foot, if they are not too far engaged, and so avoid the danger, but not the long-sufferings which follow generally after such adventures.

In short, every body has some story to tell of the mountain, and complain of it; for some lose their toes, others their fingers; some their sight; some are benumm'd and lam'd, and so remain all their life with great infirmities. And I do not wonder at all at this, because though one should pass without a storm, yet the cold is so terrible, that it cannot but injure nature extremely in that season, since even in the midst of summer, when we pass this mountain, and in the lower part of it sweat with heat, as soon as we come to pass the top, we are forced to put on double cloathing, and prepare the stomach with good warm things, to withstand the sharpness of the cold, and the subtileness of the air, which penetrates the body through and through, if it be not well cover'd.

Among the several times that I have pass'd this mountain, one was in the beginning of April, when autumn in those parts is at an end, and the winter begins to threaten, and I must own that the cold was so intense, that it seem'd a different species of cold from all those I ever felt either in India or Europe; though even then it had not begun to snow, the cold was so fierce that it made one's hands cleave; nay, it had an effect upon the very rocks, for I remember the sun was reflected by them as by a looking-glass. When we come to treat of the first discovery of this kingdom, I shall re-

late what was endur'd by the *Adelantado Don Diego de Almagro* with his army, and by those who afterwards followed him, and pass'd this mountain, in which they were so ill handled, that some were struck blind, others lame; some lost their fingers without feeling it, because the excessive cold took away all sense; some were frozen to death, and with them some horses, whom six months after some other Spaniards found so fresh and well preserv'd, that they eat of them; and to secure themselves from cold, made a defence of those dead bodies; nay, some got into them. About six years after, others going that way, found a negro, who at that time was frozen to death, leaning against the side of a rock, with a lead horse, and the reins in his hand, though consumed with time. They who have a mind to know more particulars, let them read *Don Antonio de Herrera, Decade 5. Book 10. and Chap. 5.* and also *Garcilasso de la Vega*, in his first tome.

'Tis necessary to understand, that it is of this cold of the mountain that authors speak, when they say, That the cold of *Chile* is so severe, that the rivers are frozen up, and men frozen to death in the fields: for this is only true of those uninhabitable mountains, where I believe at that season the rivers do not run, but are turned into chrystal; and if any springs do escape, they are very few, and that in the valleys most secur'd and shelter'd; that appears by the rivers which run in the plain country, which are almost dried up, in comparison of the quantity of water that they carry with them in the summer.

And thus the truth of what historians relate may be saved from contradiction; for they not knowing the country, make no distinction between the mountain and the plains, in which there never was seen any such effect of cold in any part of them; for the sea air, which is thick and moist, tempers the sharpness of the blasts from the *Cordillera*; and for this reason it is, that the colds of the *Pampas* of *Cuyo* and *Tucuman* are so insupportable; as also those of *Buenos Aires*, which being at such a distance from both seas, and not enjoying the warmth of its vapours, the air in summer is intolerably scorching, and in winter so cold, and for want of rain so dry, that 'tis common for animals to be found dead in the fields, as well as the men too sometimes.

C H A P. XII.

Of the Fountains which rise in other Parts of Chile, besides the Cordillera.

Fountains of Chile.

BESIDES the rivers and springs of the *Cordillera*, there are others which rise in the plains and valleys, which have

admirable properties. I shall mention some, for 'tis impossible to rehearse them all, nor can I remember but a few. First, that which

which rises at the foot of the high *volcano* of *Villa Rica*, so famous in that kingdom for its terrible effects, for which God Almighty makes himself to be feared and respected by mankind; rises, I say, at the foot of this mount with such force, that it springs out of the earth in two sources, each as big as a man, and sufficient to form alone a good stream, and runs into a lake which is made by its waters.

Rio Chico.

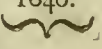
In another lake, out of which comes the river call'd *Rio Chico*, there rises also a fountain of hot water, most efficacious for the cure of leprosy, and all contagious infirmities. There is another springs up in the *Maguay*, yet most admirable; for there are two sources just by one another, the one of hot, the other of cold water; the hot one is so hot, that no one can endure his hand in it; the cold one is let in to temper the bath which is made for the sick. The baths of *Rancagua* are also very famous, and like these; which, for being near *St. Jago*, and in the greatest intercourse of the kingdom, are very useful, and much frequented. There are others in other parts; but not remembering them distinctly, I can say little of them. Among

Fountain of Ramon.

the fountains, that of *Ramon* is very famous, as well for the goodness, as abundance of its waters; which is such, that they alone are sufficient to water many fields: it is about two leagues eastward of *St. Jago*, and in that district. There are many others, among which that of *Caren* is worth taking notice of: it springs in a beautiful meadow, of about five or six leagues in length, affording a delicious prospect; its water is very sweet, and enters into the meadow; the earth of which is so porous, that whoever treads hard upon it, feels it shake under him: it is all the year green; and the grass is a kind of small trefoil, called by the inhabitants *Caren*, and is pleasant to eat. Neither ought I to pass over in silence another fountain between these two, very plentifully furnished with delicate sweet water, which is always so much the cooler, as the weather is hotter; it is call'd the fountain of *Mayten*, by reason of a tree of that name, which grows at the foot of a great square table of live rock, where people use to go and eat their collations, the tree sheltering them all the while from the heat; for 'tis a tree whose leaves are green all the year, something like a myrtle, but much larger, and without dispute of a more beautiful green: by its foot runs this fountain, whose source is a little higher in a valley, from whence it comes murmuring upon pebble stones, and among pleasant groves full of beautiful herbs and flowers.

Mayten.

VOL. III.

The trees, though wild, yet bear very OVALLE. 1646.  savoury fruits of that soil; and in them are great variety of birds, who, with their harmony and sweet notes, make the entertainment more delightful for those that frequent the place. 'Tis not the least part of *A delightful prospect.* their enjoyment, to discover at the end of these woods a prospect for many leagues over plains, which being of so great extent, many of them lie uncultivated; so that among the vineyards and plowed lands, the wild uncultivated part is so beautiful, particularly in the spring, that one would think art had help'd nature. There are in one place great spots of yellow flowers, which cover the earth, so that for a great space nothing else is to be seen; then you have white, blue, lillemot spots of the same proportion; the green meadows mingle in this with the waters of the river *Mapocho*, which is seen from this distance *Mapocho.* sometimes entire in its bed, then divided into several arms, and at last drained into the fields of the neighbouring grounds, to fertilize them. The prospect is terminated with several farms, which are called *Chacra's*, with their churches; and in the midst of all, the city of *St. Jago*, the capital of *Chile*, which being not above two leagues off, and the heavens so serene, the towers of it are easily distinguished, and the bells heard sometimes.

This district is full of a great many more springs, all within the compass of a mile of each other; and their waters are excellent and healthy.

That which is to the north of the city of *Conchalli.* *St. Jago*, called *Conchalli*, is likewise highly commended; it springs in a little valley, called the *Salto*, or *Leap*, because of the fall of the river *Mapocho*. This river comes running in a plain to a certain place; where being divided (for it is the work of industry) into two branches, the greatest of which runs in its natural channel, the lesser is derived to water this valley; which towards the west is even; but towards the east the land is so high, through which the river runs, that it is two or three mile from the bottom of the valley to the high grounds, from whence the river falls. It is precipitated with great noise, making lovely and various cascades by the rencounter of the rocks and other obstacles, which by their streight passages retard its course, till at last it comes entire to the valley, and is divided into cuts and channels for the watering it; which is not ungrateful, to make a more than ordinary return to those who cultivate it, not only in corn, most excellent wine, and most savoury fruits of all kinds, but also it ripens them above a month before any other place thereabouts; and it is very remarkable,

H

OVALLE. remarkable, that in this valley, which is only half a league from the city of *St. Jago*, the figs use to be ripe, when in the gardens of the city, and all its neighbourhood, they scarce begin to change colour: therefore, as well for this as the game it affords, of partridges on the hills, and wild fowl in the waters and ponds of it, it is the greatest entertainment all those parts afford.

I shall not dilate upon more of these fountains, which are so frequent; for if I were to mention them all, I should never have done; for since those alone of the *Conception*, *Arauco*, and the country of the limits upon the warlike *Indians*, would require a large treatise, besides those of the district of *St. Jago*, what would it be then in the territories of the ancient cities, which are yet farther in the country? for it abounding extremely in rivers, it is to be presumed that it must be so in fountains and springs; all which proceeds from the abundance of moisture of the *Cordillera*.

Of these springs, the most agreeable for their good waters are the farthest off from the *Cordillera*, because they are more purified by a long motion, and refin'd by the good qualities of the earth they run through, particularly the mineral impregnations are singular: I cannot but mention one, which is in the novitiate of the company of the *Jesuits* of *Bucalemo*, whose waters are not to be match'd, at least I never met with the like; for without drinking them, one may discover by the touch their nobleness, their softness being like that of new butter; and they do make the hands that are wash'd in them in a few days smooth, and thereby prove their vast difference from other waters.

This fountain springs in a little valley, very pleasant, under some hills, about a league from the sea; and it bubbles up between a white sand, in which there is gold, as if it had a fire under it to make it boil. It is wonderful to observe, that if they throw any bough or flowers upon it, it seems to take it ill, and never is at rest till it has swallow'd it up, leaping up against it several times, till it has made it its own, and hid it from our sight; and this it will do for a whole evening, if they continue throwing flowers or branches of trees into it, without any body's being able to tell what becomes of them all.

The effects that this water causes in the stomach are admirable: it helps to digest the meat with more easiness; it destroys crudities, dissolves phlegms and gross humours, and evidently prolongs life, especially to old men. This was most particularly made clear in the person of that famous captain *Sebastian Garcia Caretto Chumazero*, the founder of that novitiate, who lived there many years, and came to be ninety years old in good health, and so vigorous, that he did to the last go on horseback through the woods and mountains, as if he had been a young man. I heard him say many times, that this fountain was his life; for as soon as he found himself any ways out of order, he sent immediately for the water of it, and drinking it fresh from the spring, he used to go to bed upon it; where falling asleep, he would after some time awake well disposed: this I have often been witness of. The old *Indians* thereabouts experimented the same, and did attribute their good state of health to this spring, without using any other physick or remedies.

C H A P. XIII.

Of the Lakes of Chile, and the Salt that is gather'd from them.

Lakes.

AFTER having treated of the fountains and rivers, it seems natural to treat of the lakes and standing waters form'd out of them, and by some inundations of the sea in winter, when it fills them, and leaves them provided for all the summer. Those made by rivers come first in rank; and I wish my memory would serve to place them here, with their several qualities. Omitting then to repeat what we have said of those of *Aculco* and *Pudaguel*, which being near *St. Jago*, make the greatest diversion of its inhabitants, we will begin with the lake of *Tagataguas*, about fourteen leagues from that city, and which once was more in esteem; for the trouts catch'd there are of a larger size, and the game for wild fowl so much more diverting, that there is no comparison be-

tween these waters and others. I do not describe here particularly the variety of wild fowl, because I intend to do it when I treat of the variety of birds of this country. The lakes of *Villa Rica* are of great renown, though I confess I know little of their properties.

The lake of *Puren* has been famous, having been an impregnable fortress for the warlike *Indians* our enemies, by reason of the disposition and qualities of its situation; for from thence they have for many years maintain'd a war with whole armies of *Spaniards*, without being subdued: their advantage lay in this, That upon any rout given them by us, they had here a most certain and safe retreat, which when once they had recovered, they were out of all danger; for none could hurt them either by sword or fire.

The

Lake of
Tagata-
guas.

Sea lakes.

The sea lakes are also many, and of great profit to their owners ; for the fisheries in them are much more certain than in the sea : for which reason they furnish the best part of the lenten fare, though the sea affords a great deal too. Among the rest the lake of *Rapel* brings a great revenue: it runs in length above two leagues within the land. In the winter time the sea is joined to it ; for by its storms it forces an entrance, but it leaves it full of all sorts of fish ; which, with those that are bred there, furnish it for the whole year, and enable it to supply all the neighbouring country ; and that not only with fish, but with salt too in abundance : for, about *January*, the communication ceasing between it and the sea, when the sun is at its hottest in that climate, the water is congealed so, that it has a crust of a foot, or more, thick of a most excellent white salt. This, indeed, does not happen every year ; for it requires an extream heat to do it, the lake being deep, and the climate there more enclining to cold : but they provide themselves in one, for many others ; and the salt-pits made by hand seldom fail ; for they not being of great extent, the water that is let into them turns to salt with less heat, the matter to be congealed being less in itself. And since we are mentioning salt, I cannot omit to relate what I myself have seen in the valley of *Lampa*, which is about three leagues from *St. Jago* ; and it is this, There grows an herb, not unlike to *Sweet Basil*, only its green is upon an ash-colour, and not so gay ; it rises about a foot above ground : this plant, in the summer, is covered over with small grains of salt, like pearl, which is congealed upon its leaves, either from the dew of heaven, or by some vapour raised by the sun from

that earth ; or else the nature of the herb itself is such, as to sweat out this humidity, which being afterwards congealed by the heat of the sun, is turned into salt. Let the cause be what it will, the effect is seen no where but in this valley, and upon that species of herb ; which is therefore much valued by the *Indians*, the salt of it being more savoury, and of a finer flavour than any other.

I cannot tell whether *Johannes de Laet* means this in his description of the new world ; for having mentioned the kingdom of *Chile*, to which he gives the preference for its excellent properties, he says, That in that kingdom, in some of its valleys, there falls, at certain times of the year, a dew so thick upon the leaves of the plants, that it is like sugar, and serves, being kept some time, for the same use as marna. *Antonio de Herrera* reports the same thing, in his general history of the *West Indies* ; and, amongst other commendations he gives this noble kingdom, he relates the same thing of this strange and admirable dew. I say upon this, that I know not whether they allude to what I have reported of the valley of *Lampa* by my own sight, and have no knowledge of that other thing they mention ; though one would think, such authors should distinguish things so different in their effects and savour, as salt and sugar. 'Tis possible, God may have done both, having been so wonderfully liberal to that country, where the singularities are so many and wonderful ; and it would therefore be no wonder some of them should not be known, especially, considering that we, who are there employed for the conversion of souls, have not the time to search after curiosities, and secrets of nature.

OVALLE.
1646.Salt found
on an herb
growing in
the valley
of Lampa.

C H A P. XIV.

Wherein is treated of the Sea of the Kingdom of Chile, and of the Etimology of its Name.

Sea of
Chile.

THE fountains, springs, rivers, and brooks, carry us along with them naturally to the sea, where their course ends, and where there is room for my pen to exercise itself, if the brevity of this narration did not confine my flight : I must therefore be content to say something of this element, that the nature of it may not be unknown as to this new world.

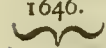
Etimology
of the name
of Chile.

Beginning therefore with the etimology of its name : 'Tis well known that all commonly call it the *South Sea*, because it is towards the *antartick* pole, from whence generally the south wind blows, in opposition to the *tramontana*, or north, which

reigns in the ocean as far as the *artick* pole. But leaving these disputes to the schools, or rather to that abyss of divine wisdom, *qui profert ventos de thesauris suis*, 'tis a known truth, that the effects which the wind of the *artick* pole causes in its jurisdiction towards the opposite part, the same is caused by the south wind in its motions from the *antartick* towards these parts.

In *Chile* we look upon the south wind as a favorable wind, as in *Europe* the north is in the same esteem. The north with us covers the heavens with clouds, causes tempests and storms at sea, and makes all the land dark and sad : the south, on the contrary,

The south
wind most
favourable
at Chile.

1646.  OVALLE. contrary, clears the sky, serenises the air, and makes the sea as calm as milk : on the contrary, this same fourth wind, in the north sea, is stormy, and covers the heavens with clouds, and raises those tempests, which do so endanger ships ; whereas the north, called there *tramontana*, clears all again, and makes the fine days.

From hence proceeds, that in *America* the south wind reigns in summer, when the sea is calm, and the north in winter, when it is tempestuous : the north does most certainly, bring with it the rains, particularly from thirty six degrees to the pole, and that so suddenly, that sometimes, in the moment the wind comes to the north, the rain falls, and most commonly 'tis within half an hour after its change ; and when in those parts in winter the sun is clear, and the weather fair, 'tis when the south wind overpowers the north ; for the south in those parts is cold and dry, and so drives away the clouds, so as it happens sometimes that the heavens are dark ; and as soon as the clouds are discharged, if the south appears a little the stronger, 'tis an infallible sign of calm weather, which generally follows in a trice ; for this wind drives all the clouds so before it, that when it blows, it does not leave one in the sky.

The contrary of this is seen in *Europe*, where the south winds bring humidity, and the north drives it away : the south relaxes the body, and affects the head ; but the north strengthens the body, purifies the air, and dries up superfluous humours. In short, these two winds cause quite different effects in *Europe* and in *America*, that we may call the *Europeans* sons of the north, and those of *South America* children of the south.

From this there follows another very notable and well-known difference, which is, That as to go from *Europe* to the *Indies*, the north is the proper wind, and carries us before it, and by consequence is contrary to our return ; so in the *South Sea*, sailing from the pole towards these parts, the south is the favourable wind, and contrary to our return : from whence it proceeds, that the voyage from *Spain* to *Carthagena* being by the *North Sea*, and made in thirty, forty, and fifty days, the return to *Spain* uses to last fourscore, and a hundred, and more days. On the contrary, in the *South Sea*, where the voyage from *Chile* to *Lima* is but of about a fortnight, and as much more to *Panama*, or thereabouts, the return only to *Lima* is of two months, and from thence to *Chile* forty days. The *South Sea* is also called the *Pacifick Sea*, to distinguish it from the *North Sea*, whose storms and tempests are so frequent ; whereas in the *South Sea* they are rare : but, in my opi-

nion the difference is for another reason, which I shall alledge here.

The most frequent navigations of the *South Sea* are from *Peru* to *Panama*, and from thence to *New Spain* and the *Philippinas* ; and those from *Peru* to *Chile* are less used : by which it appears, that the best part of the *South Sea* navigations are between the tropicks ; and so the sun has so much force, as to keep the winds from being furious, and making such lasting storms as those which are raised without the tropicks, and in parts nearer the pole ; for this reason the sailors in these warm climates, where there never is any winter, called this sea the *Pacifick Sea*, from the good effects they experiment in it. The contrary of this is in the *North Sea*, where most of the navigations are out of the tropicks ; where the sun having less force, the winter predominates, and raises mighty storms. Now the *Europeans*, who first navigated the *South Sea*, being such as were used to those dangers, to which the navigators of the northern parts are most commonly exposed, when they found so quiet a sea as that under the line, and in those which particularly are the seat of commerce with *New Spain*, *Panama*, and *Peru*, they gave it the name of *Pacifick*, without examining any further the cause of the difference of the effects, which they experienced in both seas : but if they had try'd that very *South Sea* beyond the tropick of *Capricorn*, they would not so easily have named it *Pacifick*.

I know that this discourse will be approved by those who have had experience of the hardships which are suffered by the navigators, from the twenty sixth degree of latitude on the coast of *Chile*, to fifty three degrees ; for there, as soon as the winter begins, the sea cannot be navigated without manifest danger, the storms being no ways inferior to the greatest in the *North Sea* ; and though at that season it is not so dangerous for ships to sail from *Chile* to *Lima*, because they every day get into a less latitude, and so enjoy a quieter sea, yet from *Peru* to *Chile* it is extream dangerous, not only because they come into a greater latitude, and go out further to sea, to avoid the south winds opposition, but also because the vapours of the sea, and cold mists of the earth do raise such fogs and dark clouds, that they cover the land so, that when they make their port, they are in great danger of splitting upon the rocks.

This, I say, is only of those coasts of *Chile* which are in the least latitude ; for from the city of the *Conception*, towards the pole, even in summer, they are dangerous ; and the ships which are bound for the islands of *Chiloe* have not above two or three months in the year to go in and out

con-

Remarks on the navigation of the South Sea,

Called also the Pacifick Sea.

conveniently, or they neither go in nor out till the year following: this is understood as far as forty four or forty five degrees, in which this archipelago of islands is placed; for from thence to the streights of *Magellan*, those may relate the dangers who have experienced them, and passed those streights: all that I know of it, is, that they all have matter enough to discourse of at their return.

So that we may say, that the name of *Pacifick* does not absolutely belong to the *South Sea*, according to its whole extent, but only as to those parts of greatest intercourse, which, because they are within the tropicks, are the freest from storms; and yet it cannot be deny'd, but that the *South Sea* has an advantage over the *North Sea*, even within the tropicks, which is, that it is free from those great sands which are so common in the *North Sea*, about *Carthage-na*, *La Havana*, and other islands, nay, even in the canal of *Babama*; which indeed are so many, that let a storm be but moderate, they make it still greater, and more dangerous, by shortening the sea-room, and force the failors to be always heaving the lead, or else to split upon the rocks, which may be clearly seen and distinguished from the ship's side.

I find likewise, that the *South Sea* may be called *Pacifick* for another reason, which is, because of the extream quiet it enjoys in its navigation, without disturbance from any of its enemies, who are so frequent on all the shores of the *North Sea*; for there be-

ing no other entrance into the *South Sea*, ^{OVALLE. 1646.} but by the streights of *Magellan* and *St. Vincent*, which are at such distance, and defended by nature itself, the enemies of our quiet do not care to engage in so uselefs and dangerous a design, with so manifest a destruction, and so little advantage, as hath happened already to some hereticks who have attempted it; for having no settlement, nor landing place in all that vast sea, they have been forced to fail to the *Philippinas*: therefore the ships of the *South Sea* are free from any fear of enemies, and go and come without any apprehension of danger on that side. *Antonio de Herrera*, in the fifth *Decade* of his *General History*, folio 319. relates the motive that *Magellan* had to call this the *Pacifick Sea*, and that is, Because there is not in all that element a more specious career for the winds and tides, and because there reigns between the tropicks so steady and strong a levant, that in many days the seamen need not hand their sails, nor the steerfman his helm, sailing through those vast seas as if it were in a canal or river. And the same author adds, That this motion of this wind proceeds from the course of the first *Mobile*, which is proved by its perpetual invariability, and the increase of its vehemence, as it draws nearer the *Equinox*. Some dispute, whether it ought to be called a wind, or an impulse which the air receives from superior orbs, communicated to them by the first sphere. So far this author.

CHAP. XV.

Of the Sea Coasts of Chile, and its Ports and Havens.

IT would be too great an excursion beyond my purpose, to mention all the ports and creeks along the coast of *Chile*; for they are very numerous. *George Spilberg*, admiral of a fleet of six sail, whose names were, the *New Sun*, the *New Moon*, the *Hunter*, the *Pole-Star*, *Eolus*, and *Lucifer*, says, he observed twenty five ports in the streights of *Magellan* alone, before he entered the *South Sea*: he commends them mightily, but particularly he is much pleased with the twenty fifth; for he staid in it some time, and gave it his own name: he calls it a noble port, by reason of its safeness for shipping, as also for the pleasantness of the fields, which, he says, were all covered with fruit; which I suppose were strawberries, according to the description he makes of them. He found there likewise abundance of excellent oysters, at the mouth of a river, which beautify'd that port extremely, it falling into it from high

VOL. III.

mountains. But this retreat did not serve them long; for having seen some very fine coloured birds, they pursued them on shore, and hunted them; which they had no sooner begun to do, but they were assaulted by a troop of *Indians*, with clubs in their hands, and some of them were killed, and the rest forced to retire to their ships, and set sail in haste; which is a great mark of the valour with which those people engaged them; for though they had fire-arms, they could not withstand the charge.

The most famous port in all the coast, ^{Port of Co-} besides that of *Valdivia*, which we have described already, is that of *Coquimbo*, mentioned in our seventh chapter; and it deserves all sorts of commendation, as well for its lovely bay, where ships ride as safe as can be, as also for the pleasantness of the country about it; which is one of the most delicious of all *Chile*. The products of the country are particularly gold and

I

copper,

*Spilberg's
observation
of twenty
five ports in
the streights
of Magel-
lan.*

*Spilberg
assaulted by
the Indians.*

OVALLE. copper, which is carried from thence to **1646.** *Peru*; for the making of artillery, casting of bells, and other household furniture.

Copiapo, Guasco, and Pacudo. The ports also of *Copiapo* and *Guasco* are esteemed, and more deservedly that of *Pacudo*, which is a private hidden bay, where the ships of *Peru* come to load with the hides and tallow of *Chuapa*; as also with tar and tackling for ships, which is made in that valley, and is whiter and better than any in *Chile*, by reason of the excellent waters they make use of in its making.

Quintero. The next good port to these, is, that of *Quintero*, where the general of the six ships above named landed; and it being a place uninhabited, met with no opposition, but refreshed his men with a large fishing which they made. They do so commend the place, that they cannot sufficiently (they say) extol the pleasantness of the land, the sweetness of the water, the security for ships, and, in short, all sorts of conveniences for human life; and after these many encomiums, the historian concludes thus, *portus hic nulli secundus*, this port yields to none; and yet this port of *Quintero* is none of the famous ones of *Chile*; by which it may be inferred, that he was but little acquainted with the rest. He could not land in them; for he found them all guarded by the militia, who expected him; and though coming to *Val Paraiso*, he had begun to land some men, yet, upon advice that the horse of *St. Jago* were at hand to hinder the descent, he took them on board again; and failing at midnight, cast anchor at *Quintero*, where they watered, and cut wood, the admiral himself landing with many soldiers to protect his men: there they drew up a trench, with a kind of half-moon, to secure their retreat against the *Spaniards*, who began to appear upon the hills; but they did not stay for them, but embarking again, followed their course towards *Peru*, not landing any where else; but yet they commend the land extremely.

Coucon, or Quillota, and Val Paraiso. After these follows the port of *Coucon*, or *Quillota*, which serves to embark the product of those valleys; and hard by that, the port of *Val Paraiso*, where are landed all the goods brought for the city of *St. Jago*: from whence they are distributed all over its territory, and as far as *Cuyo*, and *Tucuman*: This port is every day more and more inhabited; and there is building a convent of *austin* friars, which will be of great relief to the souls of the inhabitants, and of all those who go and come, who are not a few; for this is the port of the greatest commerce with *Peru*: 'tis distant from *St. Jago* twenty four leagues, all plain and good way, fit for carriage; and so all the commodities of both kingdoms are conveyed and exchanged by it.

Near the port of *Val Paraiso* is that of *St. Antonio*, which is also very safe and good, and is at the mouth of the river *Maypo*. There is a mistake in authors about this; for they place the port of *Val Paraiso* at the mouth of a river, which they make in their maps to come from *St. Jago*; which is a very great error, because, at *Val Paraiso* there is no river of any note, but only springs and fountains, which rise out of the rocks close by the sea, which are most excellent waters. There are also others of a coarser nature, with which the ships fill their provision, because they having more body, they resist better at sea against corruption.

There are several other ports between that and the *Conception*, in the bays and mouths of rivers; but not much used, because they are not necessary; all those valleys from *Maule* to *Quillota* sending their commodities to *Val Paraiso*. I believe in time other ports will be employed, because the products of that kingdom multiply apace, and so people will be willing to seek out the nearest ports for embarking their goods. All the product from *Maule* upwards, is carried to the harbour of the *Conception*, which is the best bay in all those coasts; and it being a very large one, providence placed at its entrance the island of *Quiriquina*; under which, as under a mole, ships are secured in foul weather. At the Quiriquina largest entrance of this bay is the port of *La Herradura*, or *Horse-Shoe*, it being in that form; and opposite to that is that of *St. Vincent*; and a little farther, that of *Carnero*, called so for the refreshment it afforded to one of the ships of the bishop of *Palencia*, who, by order of *Charles V.* passed the straits of *Magellan* with six sail, and having lost their *Palache*, were forced to the *Moluccas*.

Next to these are the ports of *Tirva* and *Quedal*, *La Baia Chica*, that of *Puralla*, the port of *St. Cebrian*, that of *Sancta Clara*, that of *St. Domingo*, *St. Esteran*, *Los Reyes*, that of *Baixas*, that of the *Innocents*, and many others less considerable, as far as the straits of *Magellan*.

Besides these ports which we have marked upon the *terra firma*, there are several others, well known in the islands of *Juan Fernandes*, *La Mocha*, *Sancta Maria*, in the islands of *Chiloe*, *Alfie*; where the most frequented are that of *Caremapo*, and that called the *English Port*, because formerly an *English* ship landed there, and the men and ship, with all its artillery, were made prize. There are also several other ports in the archipelago of *Chiloe*, which I forbear mentioning, because I have not a perfect account of them.

C H A P. XVI:

Of the Fertility of the whole Coast of Chile:

THE abundance and fertility of this kingdom is not only perceived in its valleys and fields, but likewise in its whole coast, even on the rocks, where the sea beats. It will be hard to make this appear by particulars, because though in other parts of the world the rocks produce shell-fish, yet I do not know that it is in such quantity, nor so large any where as in *Chile*, nor of so many different species. First, I will speak of that which is most common and intelligible: There grows along the coast every where an herb not unlike to endive; they call it *Lucbe*, which they pull from the rocks: it is gathered in the spring, when 'tis most grown; and being dried in the sun, 'tis made into loaves, which are look'd upon as a great delicacy far from the sea, particularly in *Peru*, *Cuyo*, and *Tucuman*; for it serves for many sauces. It grows upon the tops of rocks, such as are above the water. At the foot of the rocks are found certain roots, which bring forth a trunk as thick as one's wrist, called *Ultecueste*: this they cut, and laying it before the fire, they pare it like a lettuce, or cardoon, or thistle, but it has a much different taste. From these trunks shoot out certain long cods, of three or four yards long, and some of about six or eight fingers in breadth: these they call *Coebauro*; and there are two sorts of them, which, though they resemble one another, yet the *Indians* make a great difference between them, reserving the good, which they cut and dry, and make provision of them for *Lent*; the others they leave to the sea, which heaps them up upon the shoar, where they lie in heaps very useless. So much for the herbs. Now let us speak of the sea shell-fish. The best of this kind are oysters, both great and small, so much talked of by the *Hollanders* with great commendations: they found them in the streights of *Magellan*; but the greatest plenty of them is on the coast of *Coquimbo*, where they are very large and delicious; the lesser sort they call *Tacas*, very much valued too, and taken all along that coast. But those of greatest renown are the oysters of *Chuapa*; in the great ones are bred pearls, as the *Dutch* say, and, according to *John* and *Theodore de Brye*, they bought some of the *Indians* in the streights very finely wrought.

The herb
Lucbe.The root
Ultecueste.

Oysters.

Choros.

That which they call *Choros* is also a fine sort of shell-fish, and in its shell, as *Antonio de Herrera* says, there are pearl very white. That sort which I have seen is

not so big; but since they are to be found every where, there may be of all sorts of them; for they are caught in abundance, both little, middle size, and large ones, some as broad as my hand. The choicest of them are those which have the fish of a yellow colour, though the black ones are good too.

There is another shell-fish, called *Mane-Manegues*, which is in two round shells, such as serve for models in architecture; the fish within is but coarse meat, but of good sustenance. In one kind of these, which is the little sort, in opening the shell, which in the inside is like mother of pearl, when one takes out the meat, one may see the impression on the shell, of a purple colour, which represents the image of the most holy virgin, with her mantle, and her child in her arms, which causes great devotion and comfort; and, though they all have this impression, yet some have it so perfect, that it is wonderful.

A fish they call *Locos* may also be ranked among the shell-fish: they call them also *Afs's-Hoof*, because they are of that shape: They are very savoury, but hard and indigest; for which reason they are to be eaten sparingly, though in the dressing of them they macerate them between two stones, to soften them. I should never have done, to go through all the kinds of shell-fish; as likewise of snails, which are also good to eat, and are produced on the rocks. There are some cast up by the sea, in such quantity, that ship loads may be had of them, of such variety of figures and colours, that I doubt not but the curious in *Europe* would value them, and our artists would make curiosities of them; but they, for want of such artificers, are good for nothing in the *Indies*, but to make lime of, by burning them in a furnace; yet they are in such vast quantities, that the shore is covered with them, and they make a fine shew.

The shell-fish called *Picos de Papagayos*, *Picos de Papagayos* are another kind much esteemed: they are so called, because for their shape and bigness, they are just like parrots heads; and as these birds build their nests on shoar, in some hollow rocks and caves, so this fish breeds in a kind of stone-work, hollow, like little cells, where it grows till it comes to be of the bigness of those heads. They dress them in those very nests, which serve for pots, and when they are enough, take them out. They are excellent meat.

Those

OVALLE. 1646. Those which they call *Kericos*, though common in other parts, yet I never saw them so large as in those parts; and being taken in the increase of the moon, they have very large tongues, fat, and of about two fingers breadth.

Kericos.

Crabs, Apavico-
ras, and
Praunes.
Lobsters.

The *Crabs*, *Apavico-
ras*, and *Praunes*, are likewise very good, and of several sorts and sizes. The *Lobsters*, and those of that kind, are likewise much esteemed; they breed under the rocks, and are fished for, as all the rest, not with nets, but only by the *Indians* going into the sea up to their middle, and knocking them from the rocks with sticks in their hands. So much for this kind of eatables. There are others which live a little more in the sea, which are of a beautiful form; some they call sea-stars; some the sun; others the moon; because they are of the form of those planets, as they are commonly painted. These may be eaten too; but they have one very singular propriety, which is, to cure the vice of drunkenness, being reduc'd to powder, and given in wine to drink; and this is of

so certain an effect, that those, who before they took it had no greater delight than drinking of wine, did afterwards so abhor it, that they would not touch it, though they were hir'd. This is a healthy remedy, as well as sure; and therefore us'd by the *Negroes* to avoid taking another; which, though as certain, is very dangerous; which is, drinking the sweat of a horse mingled with wine. They say, this puts those who take it, in danger of losing some of their senses; though I knew one, who being exceedingly given to drunkenness, his wife gave him this remedy without his knowledge, and it did him no other hurt than to make him hate wine, so that he could not bear the smell of it; but, as I said, the *Negroes* use the powder of the star-fish; and though I have observed, that with some it is not so efficacious, but they long for wine again after a while, yet it is but to repeat the remedy as soon as that ill inclination prevails again: and this is commonly so practis'd upon the *Negroes*, who are much given to that vice.

C H A P. XVII.

Of the various Kinds of Fish which are fished on the Coast of Chile.

The whale. LET the whale appear first, since by its bigness it is a kind of king of the sea; and if where the king is, the court is, we may give that title to the sea of *Chile*, where there is such store of whales, that I know not any place where they abound more; and they are accompanied by such a court of little fishes of all kinds, that those who have navigated those seas, cannot but mention it with admiration. Among the rest, *William Seerten*, who came with a fleet through the streights, says, That they met with so many whales near certain islands, that they were forced to sail with great care and attention to avoid them, they being so many, that they were almost always in the ships way, and endangered the loss of them, being so big, that they look'd like rocks: they are all along the coast of *Copiapó* and *Guafo*, and are of no small profit, by the ambergreece they cast on shoar. The journals of those who have pass'd the streights do mention much of this amber floating on the sea, and therefore no doubt but a great deal of it is on shoar; but it is lost, for the *Indians* having no value for it, know it not; and 'tis but within these twelve years that the *Araucana's* minded it; by seeing some *Spanish* soldiers look for it, they did so too, and found a great deal, and very good, on the coast. Of the grey fort, which is the best, they found great pieces of an ash colour, with a nobler and more delicate smell; the ordi-

nary sorts are yellow and black, and it has a quicker, though not so sweet a smell as the grey. I have heard the people of those parts say commonly, that the difference is very accidental, and that it depends only upon being more or less prepar'd by the sun-beams: and experience seems to confirm this thought; for I have observ'd that the black does in time grow white, by being expos'd to the sun in a box; but if it be laid open, so as both sun and rain come upon it, the experiment will be more manifest; and as for the harshness of the smell, it may be remedied by infusions in rose water, exposing it first to the dews for nine days, and then to the fire, by which means it grows perfect.

Though 'tis known that amber is a thing which the whales cast from them, there is diversity of opinion about the manner, because some think that this noble product is form'd at the bottom of the sea, or upon some rocks; and that the whales eat it for food, and not being able to endure it in their stomachs, because it is naturally extream hot, they get to the shore to cast it up: others say, it is the whales excrements. 'Tis not my business to decide this dispute. The other great advantage which the whales are of to the country, is the oil they afford after they are dead; and it is a great deal that one whale will yield: it serves for various uses of life. We do not know that these fishes die of a violent death,

death, because their vast bulk defends them both from men, and all other animals, that may be their enemies; but yet being subject to pay the common debt of nature, when they find themselves near death, they draw near the land, and are often cast on shore by the sea, which will not bear any corruption in its waters; and 'tis strange to see how they are thrown up in great numbers on those coasts. The oil is made by the heat of the sun, and when the weather has consum'd the flesh, the ribs and other bones remain white; and the *Indians* make use of them for seats: much more conveniency and curiosity might be afforded by them to other workmen.

There are another sort of fish which are found most on the coast of *Coquimbo*, which are not so big as whales, but yet are very large, and a good fish to eat, which are the *tunny-fish*, and the *Albacoras*, which the *Indians* kill with great dexterity: they go into the sea a good way upon floats of seal-skins, well sowed together, and blown up like a bladder; they carry with them a kind of trident with sharp tongues; this is fastened to a long, slender, but strong rope; the *Indian* guides his float near the fish he chooses, and then darts it with his trident; the *tunny*, as soon as wounded, goes out to sea like lightening; the *Indian* gives him rope enough, and follows him the way that he runs, till the fish has spent itself by loss of blood; and then the *Indian* draws in his rope, and the fish with it, either dead or dying, and lays it on his float, and he returns to port with his prey rejoicing.

There are many other sorts of fishes; one of the most extraordinary is the *flying-fish*, which fly with wings, and follow a ship like birds. The *lion-fish* is also admirable: they are found in great quantities about the *Streights* of *Magellan*, near a port, call'd *Port Desire*: they are very good to eat, but very hard to take; for though they wound them with shot in many places, yet if they do not hit them in the head, or the stomach, they do not yield: they are as big as a colt, and have a lion's head, with a perfect mane; which the females of them have not, neither are they above half as big as the males, and have a thinner skin. Those who have sail'd through the *Streights*, talk much of these

sea-lions, and do also mention many other sorts of fishes which they took there, some of sixteen foot long, very savoury and good to eat. *Antonio de Herrera* says, That there are fishes taken in the island of *Santa Maria*, out of whose eyes they take a sort of coarse pearl, which have a gloss like the true ones, and are worn by the women; and if, as they are soft, they were a little hard, they would be better than pearls.

The sea wolves, or seals, which are found on all the coasts, are innumerable. I have seen whole rocks cover'd with them, and they lay even one upon another, so as some of them rolled down into the sea again, there not being room for so many: they are as big as calves, and make a noise like them.

Antonio de Herrera, in the voyage of *Magellan* says, That in the river of the *Cross*, in the *Streights*, they took one so large, that without his head, skin, and fat, he weigh'd nineteen *Castilian Arrobas*. The *Indians* take them for their skins, which are very hard and strong, and some eat their flesh. As to the plenty of the ordinary fish of those seas, the authors already cited speak very advantageously of their kinds, particularly *William Scoresby*, who coming with his fleet to the island of *Juan Fernandez*, in thirty three degrees; and forty eight minutes, the quantity of fish they met with was so great, that in a very little time they catch'd a great quantity of *Robalos*, which is the best and most wholesome fish of all those parts. They did not take them with nets, because they had not time to land, but with hooks at sea, by the ship's side, and that as fast as they could throw in and pull up.

What I myself have seen, is in the great lake of *Rapel*, all the sides of it cover'd with *Pejereges*, by the vast quantity of them which came upon the coast, as the droves of pilchards by the bay of *Conception*, and in *Chiloe*, so that they take them with blankets. I have seen the same droves of *tunny-fish*, which come leaping over one another's backs, as if there were not room for them; and, indeed, that climate being so favourable to multiplication in all animals on shoar, as shall be shewed in its proper place, it cannot well be otherwise as to the fishes.

C H A P. XVIII.

Of the Birds of Chile.

THE birds and fishes seem to be brothers of the same venter, the author of nature having created them both out of the element of water; and therefore, to

VOL. III.

dispatch all the creatures of this country, having treated of the first, it seems that the chain of an orderly narration obliges us to say something of the others. To speak

K

generally,

OVALLE. generally, it may be truly said of the air of that hemisphere, that it has a great advantage over the earth, though so fertile, so rich, and so delicious, as we have represented it; for though it is true, that it now produces the animals and fruits of *Europe*, with such an increase as is wonderful, yet it cannot be denied, that before the *Spaniards* carried thither the seeds and animals which are now so multiplied, (for they had them not in any sort, though perhaps others which supplied the want of them,) the air, without being at all enrich'd by the accession of foreigners, has maintain'd always such an abundance of the volatile kind, that it needed no supplies from *Europe*, but rather has many to make up any one defect.

The eagle.

To begin with the king of them all, the eagle: there are there abundance of them; those which are call'd royal or imperial have been seen there only twice; first, when the *Spaniards* first enter'd that kingdom; and the second time, in the year 1640. when the *Araucanos* submitted their untam'd necks to their God and the king, they interpreting this as one of the signs of God Almighty's will to incline them to take that resolution which they then took. As for the ordinary eagles, who do not differ much from the others, they have always been and are still in the country very common. There are likewise bred falcons, so large and strong, that for their beauty they have been carried from thence, though so far, as a present to the king of *Spain*; and they are commonly carried to *Peru*, particularly that kind which are called *primas*, or first, though those call'd second are very large too. There are besides, all other birds of rapine and prey; and of the singing-birds, there are linnets, bulfinches, nightingales, blackbirds, and many others, who form some a bass, and some a tenor, with all the other parts of a harmony, beyond belief, particularly in summer, under the shades of trees.

Falcons.

Birds of prey. Singing-birds.

Birds of game.

Tame fowl.

Swallows.

Owls and bats.

The birds for game are, herons, partridges, wild pigeons, thrushes, turtles, parrots, wild ducks of a thousand sorts, some of one colour, and some of another, and all very good. The domestick tame fowls are hens, ducks, geese, turkeys; and that nothing may be wanting, swallows in summer, which go away in winter, as they do in *Europe*, to warmer climates; screech-owls, and other night-birds; as also bats.

These are the birds of the *European* kind, which are found in those parts, as well as I can remember; and there is hardly a bird here in *Europe*, that I observe in the fields, that I have not observ'd the like somewhere in *Chile*, with very little difference.

Who now can describe the variety of native birds of that climate? who are in

such variety and abundance, that people are fain to guard their vineyards from them as soon as the grapes begin to ripen; and yet 'tis impossible to hinder them from doing a great deal of mischief, they being so nimble, and having so secure a retreat, though all sorts of inventions, such as guns, cross-bows, slings, scare-crows, are put in use; so that if any are negligent, they may be sure to find their vintage made to their hand. And this mischief is not only for their vineyards, but likewise for all seeds, which is fain to be watched after 'tis sowed, 'till it sprouts; and as soon as the wheat and maize begin to ripen, the guards must be renewed; for there comes whole armies of birds to attack them, and do them as much mischief as if they were *Xerxes's* armies.

In particular, the parrots are so voracious *Parrots.* and greedy, and have a bill that cuts like a razor; they come in flocks of such an extent, that when they rise they cover the air, and fill it with such a confusion of cries, that I cannot find any thing to compare it to. This kind of birds is bred all over *Chile*, in the mountains, and in the *Cordillera*; and 'tis wonderful to see how exactly they come to an hour, as if they were call'd by a bell, or had some notice where and when the fruits are ripe, and in season for them to enjoy them: they come down from the mountains in the evening; and the noise they make in flying, though they fly high, is such, that one would think them close by: they have a shrill clear voice, and they fly all screaming at once, so that their noise is very loud: they are all green and yellow, and have a blue circle about their neck, and very good to eat, particularly the young-ones.

Those years which are to prove rainy, as the natives observe, as soon as the weather grows cool, before the winter begins, one may see every evening, for many days, great quantities of crows come down from the *Cordillera* into the plains: they come about an hour before sun-set in squadrons, forming a triangle or pyramid, the point of which is led by one single one, before whom none dare go: the figure they make is most regular, with great correspondency to each other, as if they were fixed in the air, and immoveable, so equal and well-concerted is their flight.

There is likewise a bird which we call *Taltales*, or *Galinafos*: it is like a duck, but has bigger wings: they are either black or brown, and very voracious of carrion. In the time of slaughtering, which is every year in *Chile* of most beasts, there is a great deal of flesh lost; then these birds come, as if one had founded a charge to them, and fall upon the carrion with so much greediness, that having eaten their fill,

Taltales, or Galinafos.

fill, they cannot rise again, and are easily knock'd on the head with sticks: the bones of their legs are valued to make scizers, and their quills, which are as thick as ones finger, serve for harpicals, and other curiosities. Out of this slaughtering-time they die with hunger; but among all the ways they have of maintaining themselves, their way of hunting young goats and lambs is admirable: they sit upon high trees, and from thence spy the flocks of sheep and goats, watching till any of the young-ones stray from the guard of its dam, as they often do, either staying behind to feed, or climbing some rock: this the *Taltale* quickly seeing; and that the young-one is far

from the defence either of the shepherd or old-one, it leaps upon it, and the first thing it does, is to peck out its eyes, and eat its brains; which it does so quick, that though it cry, and the shepherd or mother come to its relief, 'tis too late. Very like to these are another sort of bird, both as to bigness, colour, and shape, and its disposition to prey; they call them *Peuques*, only they are something less, and of a nicer diet, being pleased with nothing but hens or chickens, which they take very dexterously: they are so bold and nimble, as to get into a hen-roost, and carry away their prey, even in presence of the owners, without being stopped or prevented.

OVALLE.
1646.

Peuques.

C H A P. XIX.

The same Matter is pursued, and the Flying of Hawks treated of.

AMONGST the great number of birds which are bred in lakes and ponds, and on the sea-side, which are of great variety, none are more remarkable than the birds called *Flamencos*: they are white and scarlet, bigger than turkeys, but so long legg'd that they walk through a lake with great gravity, the water not touching their feathers by a foot or two: the *Indians* delight in making works of their white and scarlet feathers, for their dances and their feasts.

Flamencos.

The Child-Bird.

There is another bird, called the *Child-bird*, because it looks like a frawdled child with its arms at liberty: I have not seen them any where but at sea; perhaps they are the same, called *Pinguins*, of which frequent mention is made by those who pass the *Streights of Magellan*: They are generally painted in the maps; and they say, there are abundance of them in those parts, and that they are good meat.

Hérons-feathers.

There are other birds which furnish the tufts of feathers, called *Hérons-feathers*, which though so narrow, yet are so valued, that formerly every feather was worth two *rials*: those which grow under their wings are larger and better, though those on their heads, which they wear as *aigrettes*, are very fine. There are but few of this kind of birds; for they do not increase so much as others. There are more of that kind, call'd *Garçolas*, which serve for soldiers feathers, and other ornament. There are many others of great variety of colours, of which the *Indians* use to make their ornaments, called *Mallengues*, which are made for the head like a garland of most fine colours of wooll, and in that they stick a plume of feathers, for their dances, and days of rejoicing.

Garçolas.

Voycas.

The birds called by the *Indians* *Voycas*,

are very famous among them, in whose notes, at certain times and places, they find great mysteries, prognosticating by them, either their own, or their children, or their friends death, or sickness, or other misfortune; and they remain with great apprehension and fear. The *Spaniards* call these birds *Pebicolorados*, that is, marked on the breast; because there is no scarlet deeper, nor brighter, than the red on their breast: the other feathers of their wings and body are brown. There are other very little ones, called *Pinguedas*, whose body is not much bigger than an almond: these live upon flowers; and that they may come at the honey of them, nature has given them a bill, which, when 'tis shut, is like a needle to sew with; and for this reason they feed flying, like bees, from flower to flower, without lighting but very seldom on a branch of it, and that very slightly. These birds are of the greatest beauty imaginable; for if they were made of polished gold, they could not shine brighter: they have a green mingled with this gold colour. The males are distinguished from the females, in that they have on the head a lively orange colour, which is like fire. Those on the other side of the *Cordillera* are yet more beautiful, because their tail is also of the colour of their head; and though they have so little a body, their tail is a foot long, and two inches broad.

Pinguedas.

There is likewise a very odd bird, to which the *Spaniards* have given the name of *Wood-Pecker*; because though they are but little, they have so strong and sharp a bill, that they form their nests with it in the trees, forming a hollow place fit for them as exactly, as if they had an instrument to do it. Of these I have seen but few; but there are great numbers of a kind of birds, called

Wood-Pecker.

1646. **OVALLE**-called *Condores*, which are as white as ermin, and of their skins they make muffs, it being of a very soft touch, and extream warm; but the bellies of the buzzards are much more so, being admirable to make stomachers to cover the pit of the stomach, and help digestion.

I have not seen such variety of birds on the other side of the *Cordillera*; and the cause, I believe, is the dryness of the land, and the want of that shelter of woods and groves which are on *Chile* side; but in those plains, called the *Pampas*, there are *Fran-*

Francolins-*colins* to be found, which are a sort of wild hens, and as big; but much better meat, and of a higher relish. There are likewise

Ostriches. *Ostriches*, who are a mighty bird, and very numerous there. They often find their nests, and in them such a quantity of eggs, as one nest will feed a great company; one of them alone being beaten and fry'd, makes a pancake big enough to dine several people: their feathers are employ'd for umbrellas to keep off the sun, and other good uses.

Variety of diversions in hunting, hawking, &c. 'Tis a pleasant sight to see the taking of the *Francolins*: the *Indian*, with a string made at one end into a running knot or noose, at the other having a little piece of sharp cane fastened to it, goes out to find them, which when he has done, he draws gently near, so as not to fright his game; when he is at a due distance, he begins to go round the bird, making with the cane several circles over his head. The *Francolin* is of its own nature a very fearful bird, and simple, and dares not rise, because he thinks he is encompassed round, but goes into the middle of the circle; where the *Indian* lessening still his rounds, follows it, so that at last it squats down upon the ground, and lets the *Indian* put the noose over its head; which when he has done, touching it on the wing with the sharp end of the cane, the bird flies up, and draws the noose close, and so is catch'd like the fishes by an angling-rod.

'Tis not so easy to catch the *Ostriches*; for though they do not fly, yet they have such large wings, that though a greyhound be very swift, if the bird has law of him, he will hardly overtake him; but if by chance he comes up with him by surprise, or otherwise, 'tis wonderful to see the art the *Ostrich* uses to avoid his teeth; for when the dog is just going to seize, the *Ostrich* lets down one of his wings, and fixes it to the ground, covering with it its whole body: the greyhound thinking he has him sure, takes hold with open mouth; but he fills it only with feathers, and is cheated; for immediately the *Ostrich*, before the dog can clear his mouth, sets a running, and gets a good length before him; and often

escapes, if the greyhound does not make extraordinary haste to overtake it.

This is a very diverting sport; but that which is used in *Chile* with *Faulcons* is much more so: not to fly partridges, for that is a known sport every where; but with another sort of bird, which the *Indians* call *Quulteu*, from the sound of its note when it sings, which sounds so. These are as big as hens, and have very large wings, and upon their wings they have, in the joining place, provided by nature for their defence, certain sharp points. The *Spaniards* call these birds *Friers*, either because they always go two and two, or three and three, or because the colour and order of their feathers is so, that one would really think they have a hood and a frock.

For this sport 'tis not enough to have one *Faulcon*, but there must be two, and those very well taught, and dexterous to assist one another. There uses to be very good company to see the engagement, as we may call it; for it is worth seeing. Coming then to the place that these birds haunt, which is generally some meadow or watery ground, (for that they never forsake, their last defence being in the water, as soon as they are sprung,) one at a time, the sportsman flies one *Faulcon* at them, who, as if he minded not his game, endeavours to get as high as he can, and get the wind of his prey, who, at the same time, does the same thing, and contends for place with his enemy; so that they both get almost out of sight; but at last the *Faulcon* having the better wing prevails. When he has got advantage enough over him, he comes down upon him like lightening; but the *Quulteu* defends himself, either by avoiding the blow, or by opposing the armed points of his wings; upon which often the unwary hawk is wounded in the breast. When the sportsman sees the engagement last too long, fearing his hawk may tire, or be balked before the victory declares for him, looses his other *Faulcon* to help the first, who being fresh, soon joins his companion, and both together fall upon the *Quulteu*, but not at the same time, lest they should hinder one another: one gives him a blow, and then the other another; and so, though he make a good defence, he is forced to yield, which he does, by making a way for the water, where he has his last retreat to defend his life: here he expects his enemies upon his back, with the points of his armed wings turned towards them: the *Faulcon* despising the danger, comes down with all his force, and seizing her with one foot, tears her to pieces; but 'tis not without receiving sometimes dangerous wounds. The victory does not always cost so dear; for that is according to the strength of the contenders.

tenders. I omit the shooting of wild-fowl in the fens and waters, which is nevertheless very entertaining, as are likewise the *Indians* ways with nets, nooses, arrows, night-lights; nay, the manner of catching the *Faulcons* themselves is as diverting: 'tis done

with fine nets, in which they involve them, that they may not hurt their wings. OVALLE.
1646.

This is sufficient about the birds; and since we are in the region of the air, so near heaven, let us say something of it before we come down to the earth again.

C H A P. XX.

Of the Heaven, and Stars, which are proper to the Kingdom and Region of Chile.

TIS the common opinion of all those that have seen and dwelled in *Chile*, that its soil and heaven, if they have their equal, have not their superior in the world; and though some say the stars of the *artick* pole are larger than those of the *antartick*, yet as to their brightness and beauty, and the light they give, and as to their numbers, with the clearness of the heavens where they are, there is none but must own the advantage on the side of the *antartick*. We may give, as a natural reason of this, the temper of the climate, both as to air and earth; for though there are in it so many rivers, as we have observed, yet they being rapid, and swift in their course, do not cause overmuch humidity by their stay, but afford only what is necessary for its fertility; and, of the two extremes, the country is rather dry than moist, particularly as far as thirty four or thirty five degrees, as is manifestly made out by two experiments: first, by the facility with which all wounds are cured, which use to be much longer in wet countries; and, secondly, 'tis proved from the habitations and houses, where the best apartments are reputed to be on the first floor, they being looked upon in summer for coolest, and in winter for warmest; and, though they are watered every day in the year, and the floors most commonly but of earth, not at all upon vaults, yet they are never unhealthy; and there is no need of board-flooring or mats, let the winter be never so sharp. This is a convincing argument, that the country inclines to dryness rather than to humidity; from whence it follows, that the sun raises fewer vapours; and therefore the air being clearer, the brightness of the stars is more conspicuous; and for this reason the sun sets and rises so glorious, casting out resplendent beams of light, which is not so on the other side of the *Cordillera*; for there I have seen the sun pretty high, and its whole body visible, and yet no ways dazzling, the vapours of the earth taking away the radiant beauty of its beams.

The experience of this is yet more admirable to those who sail from *Peru* for *Chile*; for though they keep out a great way from

land, yet they know presently by the horizon when they come to the height of *Chile*; for they begin to see it all disengaged from clouds and serene, gilded and glorious, and its beauty increasing upon them every day, as they gain more height towards the pole. On the contrary, when they sail for the line from *Chile*, the nearer they grow to the tropick, that light and splendor grows duller and duller; so that in my voyage for *Panama*, I saw all the horizon muddy, sad, and clouded, which continued till I got to the *Havana*; where being in eighteen degrees north latitude, the horizon cleared up and grew every day better and better, till we got to *Spain*.

So much for the clearness and beauty of the heavens and stars, which may be confirmed by all those who have seen the place; but 'tis not so of the bigness of the stars. The astrologers pretend, That the contemplation of them, and their measure, belongs entirely to their art, as understanding best the disposition of the celestial sphere; but, in my judgment, they who can best speak of this matter, are those who have seen both poles, as is well observed by *John* and *Theodore de Brye*, in the eighth and ninth part of their twelve curious books, where they relate variety of histories, observations, and voyages, which have been in the *North* and *South America*, as far as the *Streights* of *Magellan*. They report then the opinions of learned men, who, in sailing on the *South Sea*, observed what I shall here produce, translated faithfully from their elegant *Latin* into our vulgar tongue, in these words:

The learned of our nation, who have sailed on the South Sea, do relate to us many things of that sky, and its stars, as well of their number, as beauty and bigness; and my opinion is, that the stars we see here, are no ways preferable to the meridional ones; but rather do affirm, without dispute, that those stars which are near the antartick pole are more in number, and brighter and bigger.

He adds, besides, speaking of the stars of the constellation of the *Cruzero*, that their splendors and beauty is extraordinary,

OVALLE. and that the *Via Lactea*, or *Milky-Way*,
 1646. is much brighter in these parts. This is
 all from those authors.

The four-
 teen constel-
 lations of
 of the He-
 misphere of
 Chile. *Peter Theodore*, a most skilful pilot and
 astronomer, relates in particular the stars of
 that hemisphere, and the fourteen figures or
 constellations they make. The first is the
Cameleon, which contains ten stars; the second
 is the *Indian Aspick*, made up of four stars;
 the third is the *Flying-Fish*, which is made up
 of seven; the fourth, called the *Fish Dorado*,
 is composed of five; the fifth is called the
Hydra, and is of fifteen; the bird *Toncan*,
 which is the sixth, has eight stars; and the
Phoenix, which is the seventh, has four-
 teen; the *Crane* has thirteen, which is the

eighth; in *Noah's Dove*, which is the ninth,
 there appear eleven; the *Indian Sagittary*,
 which is the tenth, has twelve; the *Pea-
 cock*, which is the eleventh is composed of
 sixteen; the *Bird of Paradise*, otherwise cal-
 led *Maucodiata*, has twelve; the thir-
 teenth is the *Triangle*, and contains five;
 and the last is the *Cruzero*, in which are
 four, which make a cross, with a little
 one close by it, which makes the foot of the
 cross. And though this *Cruzero* is the
 guide of those who sail in the *South Sea*, as
 the *Cynosura* is to those who navigate the
North Sea, yet it is not immediately at
 the pole, but thirty degrees from it; but
 there being no stars of that bigness near



it, it is made use of for that effect, but not for the needle; for that in either sea, whether south or north latitude, always turns to the north; though when one is in the *South Sea*, the whole globe of the earth, or the best part of it, is between them and the north, according to the circle that the *Cruzero* makes. The fix'd point of the pole seems to be between two, as it were, great clouds, though they are not such, but clusters of stars, not well distinguishable, such as compose the *Via Lactea*; and they are always fixed, without stirring; and when

the heavens are clear, they are brighter, and better seen. There are other stars nearer these clouds than the *Cruzero*; but not being so big, there is little notice taken of them, but only of the *Cruzero* stars, which are indeed very beautiful, and shine with great liveliness. I suppose that those who have not seen them in their own place and situation, would be glad to see a draught of them; which therefore I have placed in the foregoing page, representing them as they are seen there.

OVALLE.
1646.

CHAP. XXI.

Of the Animals, as well proper, as new Comers to the Kingdom of Chile; and also of the Bezoar-Stones.

TILL the *Spaniards* came to these *American* parts, there never had been seen in them either cows, horses, sheep, hogs, house-cats, nor rabbits tame or wild: nor dogs, except those called cur-dogs; but no hounds, greyhounds, nor other dogs for game, either by land or water; no mastiffs, nor little dogs, which we call lap-dogs; no goats, nor asses: but as soon as the *Spaniards* were settled in *Chile*, and found the land so proper for the breed of cattle and flocks, they have increas'd them to a degree of superfluity; so that there is not only enough for the support of human life, but also for those animals who are carnivorous; for, as we have seen above, in the slaughtering time, much flesh lies waste in the fields, so that 'tis necessary to burn it, and throw it into lakes and rivers, to hinder its corrupting the air. That which in other parts is call'd a calamity and desolation of the country, which is a murrain among cattle, in *Chile* is thought a necessary purge of the too great abundance of it. This may seem a paradox; but yet is founded upon experience, because the cattle increasing as it does, and the land being so good, that it fattens them to a wonderful degree, (there being often taken out of one cow a hundred and fifty pounds weight of tallow, each pound of sixteen ounces,) there is enough to do to get a vent for it. The same may be said of the hides; for though *Peru*, where the best part of the consumption is made, is so great, yet such is the product of *Chile*, that it wants another *Peru* to consume it; for this reason 'tis a gain to lose the increase of the cattle, for then the profit is more, with less trouble and cost of servants. In the beginning of the settlement in *Chile*, Don Antonio de Herrera says, That horses were commonly sold for a thousand pieces of eight a horse; and Gareilasso says, That at first a horse did

not use to be sold in *Peru* at all, except upon the death of the owner, or upon his returning to *Spain*; and in that case they were sold for four, five, or six thousand pieces of eight a horse. He says, he himself knew a soldier who had an excellent horse, and that a negro going one day by with him in his hand, a gentleman, who saw them, sent to offer the soldier ten thousand pieces of eight for the horse and negro, which he refused with contempt: but since that time horses have multiplied so, that there being not people enough to feed and tend them, they are fallen extremely. The cows too have increased so as to cover the fields; and 'tis a wonderful thing to see in those great plains of *Tucuman* and *Buenos Aires* vast herds of them feeding, without any other master than the first that will take them, if he can. I have seen in *Chile*, in the territory of *St. Jago*, horses already dress'd for war, sold for two crowns a-piece, to supply the army, and yet for shape, courage, and good qualities, they yield to no *Neapolitan* horse I ever saw; no, nor to the *Andaluzes*, from whom they are descended; for they have had no reason to degenerate in so good a land. The cows too, which were at first out of all price, I have seen sold for a crown a-piece, and the calves for half a crown: the sheep, such as I have seen bought in flocks for *Cuyo* and *Tucuman*, have been sold for three pence, or three half-pence a-piece.

Theodore and John de Brye, do mention some author, who says, That rats were likewise strangers to *Chile*, and were carried thither by an *Antwerp* ship that passed the *Streights of Magellan*: they must not mean the ordinary house-rats and mice, but those great ones which have a large tail, and are about a foot long: they are called *Pe-Pericotes*, *ricotes*, and are very mischievous. This ^{a large sort} of rats, ship, without doubt, took port in some of

1646. *OVALLE*. of those of *Cbile*, where it left these animals, so prejudicial and hard to destroy; for they resist the cats, and 'tis a stout one that can kill them. But it is a wonderful thing to observe, that though in sea-towns the magazines, shops, and warehouses, are full of them, yet they never go further into the land, which they might easily do, by so much carriage as the commerce of those parts requires. I believe the air of the *Cordillera* does not agree with them, and so may have killed those which have been carried by chance with goods; for I do not remember I ever saw one in *St. Jago*, nor in any town far from the sea-side.

Sheep.

Among the animals that are proper to *Cbile*, the first may be reckoned those which are called the sheep of that country: they are of the shape of camels, not so big, nor vast, and without the bunch that camels have: they are white, black, brown, and some are ash-coloured. The authors above cited say, That anciently they served to plow the land in some parts, before there were oxen in it; nay, in the relation of *George Spilberg* and his fleet, 'tis said, the *Dutch* passing by the island of *Mocha*, saw the *Indians* use them in that work.

They are made use of at this time in some parts, for carriage of wine, wheat, maize, and other provisions; and I remember to have seen them about thirty years ago serve to carry water at *St. Jago* from the river to the houses, for the use of the family; but now they are not at all employed there in this kind of labour, there being such quantities of mules and asses for all that service. These sheep have their upper lip slit, with which they do, as it were, spit at those who vex them; and the children, who use to do it, when they see them ready to spit, run away; for they know, and 'tis a common truth, that wherever their spitting falls, it causes a scab; and having a very long neck, about three foot long, they use these defensive arms the better. Their wool is extremely valued; for of it are woven cloaks, or mantles, so fine, that they look like camlet: they govern them by a kind of bridle, which they put through holes in their ears, and so by pulling the reins, turn them which way they will: they kneel down to be loaded, and when the loading is well fitted and fastened, they rise and carry it very gravely.

Pegues, a small sort of wild rabbits.

There are likewise natural to that country a sort of little rabbits, called by the *Indians* *Pegues*, which they eat with much pleasure: they are wild. The taking of them is very good sport: they carry water in great tubs to their holes; and though they are very deep, and have secret issues and correspondencies with each other under ground, to avoid being pursued by the

hunters or their dogs, yet the water overcomes them; and while they fly from it, the *Indians* watch for them at their other holes, and with their dogs take them as they come out to avoid the water.

There are another sort of little rabbits, *Small tame rabbits, called Cuyes*, which are like these, but they are tame, and the *Indians* call them *Cuyes*, which are also very good meat: they are of pretty colours, and spotted: they are very common every where.

The squirrels are not so; and I do not know they are to be found any where in *Cbile*, but in the valley of *Guaasco*: they are grey, or ash-colour, and their skins are mightily valued for furs, for their warmth and fineness of the touch.

The animals called *Guanacos*, *Chamois*, *Wild goats*, or *wild goats*, are very like these country sheep, as well in their shape as motions; but they are of a different colour; for they are red, of a clear colour: they never can be tam'd, but go in flocks, feeding in the fields; and 'tis as much as a very swift horse can do to overtake them running; and if they have the least start of them, they seem to play with them; for by an easy gallop, they make the horse strain; in which they are much help'd by their long legs, for by them they gain more ground at every reach: yet 'tis very easy to catch the young-ones, or those who are not us'd to be hunted; because being so tall, and their bones, because of their youth, not well knit, they are easily tir'd; so that by following a flock of them on horseback with dogs, (and they go three or four hundred in a flock,) the young-ones are forc'd to lag behind, and some are kill'd by the dogs, some are knock'd on the head with a stick by the hunter. I have seen them bring thus three or four dead at a time. And this is not only a pleasant, but a useful sport; for the flesh of these young-ones is like kid's flesh, and is eaten fresh; but that of the old-ones is not so, but dried and smoak'd: 'tis the best of that kind in the world.

These creatures breed, in a bag they have *The bezoar stone*, under the belly, the bezoar-stones, which are so valued against poison and malignant fevers, good to rejoice the heart, and other admirable effects. The matter out of which they are made, are herbs of great virtue, which these animals eat to cure themselves of any thing they ail, and preserve themselves from the poison of any venomous creature, as serpents, or poisonous plants, and other accidents.

These stones are found in the oldest *guanacos*; and the reason is, that their natural heat not being altogether so strong as the heat of the young-ones, they cannot convert into their substance all the humour of the herb they take to remedy their indisposition; and

and so nature has provided, that what remains may be deposited in that bag, and be made a stone to cure in men the same infirmities: according to this notion one may observe, that the stone is compos'd of several coats, some thicker, and some thinner, according to the quantity of matter that is gathered together at each time, just as a wax candle is made by several coats given at several times to form its bigness.

'Tis likewise a thing well experienced, that in those countries, where there are most vipers, and other poisonous animals, these stones are most plentiful; and the cause is manifest, because these animals, and the deer-kind, do beat so much ground for their livelihood, they are more expos'd to venomous creatures, which, when trod upon, wound them sorely, and they run naturally to their remedy in these herbs; and as they do this more frequently in those parts where they receive most damage, by consequence there are more of these stones engender'd.

From hence it happens, that in those parts of *Cuyo*, there is a greater quantity of these bezoar-stones to be had, than in that which we call properly *Chile*; for there are many vipers and poisonous creatures, of which *Chile* is very free, as we have said; and yet there are taken some stones here, but the greatest part come from *Cuyo*; to which likewise it is of some consideration, that there are bred more guanacos and stags than in *Chile*; for that country being not so populous, and having such vast plains, these animals have room enough for food and for increase; but it is not so towards the sea-side of *Chile*, for that being very populous, and full of cattle and flocks, there is no room for the wild ones, except upon the edges of the *Cordillera*, from whence they come down into the plains sometimes.

The bigness of these stones is in proportion to the animal that breeds them; the most certain rule is, that if they are little,

there are many in the bag, and fewer if ^{OVALLE.} large; and sometimes, when very large, ^{1646.} there is but one. I carried with me to *Italy* one that weighed thirty two ounces; and yet that was not it which made it the most valuable, but its virtues and shape, for it was a perfect oval, as if it had been turn'd by a turner: the *Indian* who found it had seventy pieces of eight for it; because when a great stone is found, it is not sold by weight, but according to the estimation of the owner, and the bigger the dearer.

The virtue of these bezoar-stones is very well known and experienced; and people of quality take them, not only in the time of their sickness, but also in health, to preserve it: the way of using them is to put them whole into the vessel that holds either the wine or water, or into the glass out of which one drinks, and the longer they stay in, the more virtue they communicate. And if a person be not much indisposed, there is no need of using them any other way; but if any one should be attack'd by any distemper of consequence, and be sick at heart, or be affected with melancholy fits, it would have more virtue to grate a little of the stone to powder, and drink it: whatsoever way 'tis taken, it comforts the heart, purifies the blood; and the using of it is look'd upon as a preservative against all infirmities.

There are also bred in the *Pampas*, or the plains of *Cuyo*, many hares; and one ^{Hares.} sort, call'd *Chirichinchos*, whose flesh tastes like that of sucking pigs. But the greatest increasers are the *Guanacos*, and the deer. It has been said already, that in *Chile* there are but few, for the reasons alledged; but there are great quantity of wild cows and ^{Wild cows.} wild mares, which came at first from some ^{Wild mares.} which went astray, by the negligence of the owners; and being once in those mountains, they have increased so wonderfully, that they are become a game, and many go to kill them, or take them for profit.

C H A P. XXII.

Of the Trees growing in Chile.

AMongst other obligations which the land of *America* has to *Spain*, one is the having enrich'd it with so many noble plants, trees, and seeds, which it wanted; for before the *Spaniards* conquer'd it, there were not in all *America* either vines, fig-trees, olive-trees, apple-trees, melicotoons, peaches, auberges, quinces, pears, pomegranates, cherries, apricots, plumbs, oranges, lemons, citrons, nor almonds. As for seeds, there was neither wheat, barley, nor oats, aniseed, coriander-feed, cumin,

VOL. III.

nor oreganum, linseed, flax, pease, beans, nor cabbage, lettuce, radishes, cardoons, chicory, or indive, *berenguenas*, gourels, melons, cucumbers, parsley, garlick, or onion. But instead of these trees, fruits, and plants, the author of nature had provided them with others of great use and good relish, such as maize all over *America*: *Frijoles*, *Las Papas el Madi*, *Los Capallos*, and some others, are proper only to *Peru*, and the land within the tropicks; the *Camotes*, *Guayabas*, *Mammeyes*, *Plan-*

M

tanos,

1646. *OVALLE*. *lanos*, *Zipitapotes*, *Anones*, *Nisperos*, *Aquacates*, *Pinnas*, *Guanabanas*, *Papayas*, *Pitabayas*, and many others, which, though highly commended, do not generally come up to the relish of the *European* fruits. And the bread and wine has been a singular addition to them, such as the *Indians* value more than all their product, and particularly the wine, which is their chief delight; as for bread they value it, but not so much.

Though *America* is oblig'd to *Europe* for all this addition, yet *Chile* much more, as having the greatest advantage by it, and with more plenty than any other part of that new world; for though all that we have nam'd of *European* plants are to be found somewhere, yet not all everywhere; for in some there grows corn, and not wine; in others both those, and not oil; in others neither corn, wine, nor oil, but other fruit-trees. The same thing may be said of the animals to eat; some have beef, others mutton, others pork, which on the continent is a delicacy, and is given to the sick; so that running over all *America*, we may find that this communication of new creatures has reach'd some parts for one thing, and some for another. But as for the kingdom of *Chile*, it may be said to have been totally oblig'd and enrich'd; for all the trees, seeds, plants, and all the animals, &c. of *Europe*, are to be found there, and that almost in every part of it, for 'tis rare to see any thing take in one place, and not in another; but if it does they may easily have it from their neighbours, if it be not so good, or not at all with them.

In the third chapter of this book, we have already mentioned how all these *European* fruits and seeds take in *Chile*, but we can never enough dilate upon that subject: It will hardly be believed by most people, particularly by those who never having been out of their own country, are so in love with it, as not to imagine there can be any equal to it, much less exceed it; and we relating things so distant, of which we cannot bring ocular witnesses, we are the more liable to contradiction; but since we are writing a history, we must speak the truth as we know it, and it really is.

Some trees do not exceed in bigness those of *Europe* of the same kind, as cherry-trees, quince-trees, almond, peach, and pomegranate-trees, olive, orange, lemon, and citron-trees, melicotoons, which last in *Tucuman* are nevertheless very large, and to that degree, that three or four men sometimes cannot embrace the body of one of those trees. I have seen some apple-trees as big as elm-trees; the pear-trees are yet bigger, and much more the mulberry-trees,

and walnut-trees, though as to their fruit, it is not so large as that of *Europe*, the nuts having the shell as thick again, and by consequence less meat. This is as to the garden-trees brought from *Europe*.

As for the trees natural to that country, they are of two sorts, the one is fruit-trees, the other not: of the first, I find only three kinds of species of those, which are likewise in *Europe*, which are the *avellanos*, or hazel-nut, the pine-tree, and the *algarabos*, or cod-tree. Of those which are not properly fruit-trees, there are the *laurel*, the oak, the willow, the cypresses, which are in great abundance, and very large; out of these they have boards very fit for boxes and trunks, which are no ways pieced, but of one plank; the doors and coverings of the churches are also of this cypress-wood.

These trees grow most commonly in the precipices of the *Cordillera*, which being very deep, the cypresses are extremely large and tall, for they shoot up till their tops can be warm'd by the sun-beams; so that they are as straight as a wax-candle, and of so fine a smell and perfume, that though it be so plentiful, it bears a good price, and a greater in *Peru*, to which 'tis carried, as well as the cedar, which does not sell so well, because there are more of them.

These cedar-trees are without comparison bigger, and have larger heads than the cypress-trees, and of one of them are made several planks; but more of this when we come to speak of the islands of *Chiloe*, for there they are larger than in any other part. The colour of the wood is red when it is first work'd, but in time, and by degrees, it loses that lively colour, and comes to be of a kind of walnut-tree colour; the planks are of the fashion of cedar planks, not so subject to the worm, but more easy to work.

The oak also yields very large planks, for they thrive exceedingly, and grow very thick; some of them are white, and the wood of them is corruptible; others are red, and incorruptible.

The planks from the *paragua*-tree are the most in use, but less valuable. The tree is a handsome branching tree, keeping its leaves green all the year: they are like elms.

The most common wood of all, and that of which there is most plenty, which serves for the covering of houses and roofs, is the cinnamon-wood. These are very large trees, of a beautiful aspect; they keep their leaves all the year, and are like that which in *Italy* they call the laurel royal. The *guayac-tree* is bred in the mountain or *Cordillera*, and from thence has its hardness and heaviness, which is such, that it is like iron; and

and the balls made of it to play at billiards, are almost as hard as the ivory ones; the tree is no large tree, and the heart of the wood is a yellow mix'd with green; the decoction of it is good for many infirmities. The sandal-tree is very odoriferous; there are great quantities of them in the islands which are nam'd from *Juan Fernandes*; 'tis a preservative against the plague, and is us'd by the confessors, and others, who are bound to approach infected people. There are other trees and shrubs of admirable virtue for several infirmities, of which the *Indians* have a particular knowledge, and perform admirable cures with them.

Sandal-tree.

The fruit-trees bred in the mountains are many, and of great variety: let us first treat of that which indeed carries the palm, not only because of its name, but that its height, beauty, and abundance, and that of its most excellent fruit, challenges the first place among all the rest.

Palm-tree.

They grow generally upon the mountains, and in precipices, so thick together, that seeing them at a distance, one would think they were a clump set by hand; they are very thick and high, all the body of the tree is naked till the top or first sprout; its nature is to lose all its old branches as the new ones come out, by which means the body of the tree rising free, and disencumber'd from such boughs as use in other trees to grow out of the sides of them, is totally employed in feeding the top, and the fruit which grows within it being, as it were, a pyramid round it, to preserve it by the admirable texture of its leaves and branches which encompass it.

These palm-trees have a wonderful property, and most certain, which is, that none of them give their fruit, except they are in sight of each other; and if it happens that one comes up alone, without a companion, though it thrive to a great largeness, yet it never bears, except another be planted by it, and this they call the female; and as soon as the female is planted, though never so little a one, yet the great ones bear, and the second in its time, when it is big enough: I have seen the experience of this; and 'tis a thing well known to all. The fruit of these trees is called *Cocos*, and is like filberds, though bigger by half, and the meat within the shell is not solid, but hollow, and is, round the edge, about the thickness of a crown-piece, and in the rest of the hollow is a kind of milk, or water, of an excellent relish; and so is the flesh of it, which is white, and serves to preserve the liquor like a viol, which stays in it till it be imbibed by the *Coco*, which happens in some months; and then they are not so good to eat as when they are fresh; but then they are good to preserve, as al-

monds are, and other kernels of that nature.

OVALLE.
1646.

Antonio de Herrera, and other authors, say, that these *Cocos* are good against poison; and nature seems to set a value upon it, by the many covers in which it is involved; first, the kernel is cover'd with a shell harder than that of the almond, then it has another cover of a green colour, and sometimes yellow, which is woven so close about it, and so strongly, that when it is green, 'tis easier to break it than to peel it off. The fruit grows close to a stalk, which sometimes will have above a thousand on it; and this is environ'd by a great shell, which grows bigger and bigger with that bunch it contains, till at last the fruit makes it burst and open into two parts, which are like two boats, each of above half a yard long, and two spans diameter in the broadest place, and the bunch within all of a fine yellow, very beautiful to look on. It hangs on the branches till it be ripe, and then falls to the ground, where it is gather'd, and great provision is made of it for *Peru*; for besides their being made a sweetmeat, the children rid the merchants of them for play-things, it being one of their greatest entertainments.

The palm-trees which bear dates, do not seem to be natural to this country, but brought from abroad; for I never saw them, as others, wild in the fields, but only in gardens.

There are other fruit-trees wild, which come in the fields, and are call'd *Pengue*; they have a red fruit, something bigger and more oval than the filberds; these the *Indians* eat boil'd with other ingredients. There are also trees call'd *Magues*, which are very beautiful and cooling; the leaves are admirable against a burn; the fruit is black like a myrtle-berry; 'tis very well relish'd, having a *dulcepiquante* very agreeable; it blackens the mouth and hands when it is eaten, and for that reason the more civiliz'd people do not use it so much. There are also fruits of which the *Indians* make their fermented liquors, whose names and properties I cannot call to mind; only I know there is great variety of them; and I can remember one call'd *Quelu*: the fruit is very sweet and small, between red and yellow; of this they make a drink extraordinary sweet. They make another drink of that which they call *Iluigan*, and the *Spaniards* *Molle*; it is of the shape and colour like pepper; the tree on which they grow is but little, but a great bearer: this drink is very agreeable, and coveted even by the greatest ladies. The most common drink of the *Indians* is made of maiz, which is the ordinary bread and sustenance of the *Indians*.

Let

OVALLE.

1646.

The Mur-
tilla.Ant. de
Herrera.

Let us end with the tree called *murtilla*; though, if we believe the authors who treat of it, it deserves to be ranked in the first place. Antonio de Herrera speaks so well of this tree in the ninth Decade of his history of the Indies, Book IX. and Folio 247. that I will relate only what he says, and that in his own words, which are as follow: [There is a kind of fruit of trees that grow on the mountains, which grow from thirty seven degrees upwards, and in those countries 'tis a common food; the natives call it Uni, and the Castillans Murtilla. It is red, and like a small grape, something bigger than a swollen pea; its shape and colour is like the pomegranate grains, its smell and taste agreeable, and not unlike a grape. It has little grains, like a fig, which are almost imperceptible to the tongue; its temperature is hot and dry: of this they make a wine, which exceeds all other liquors, even that of the east-india coco, or palm-tree: neither cyder, mead, nor beer, nor all the other drinks described by Andres de Laquuna, are to be preferred to it. This wine is clear, fine, warm, and very agreeable to the taste, as well as profitable to the stomach. It consumes all vapours in the head, its heat warming the ears without going any further: it comforts and cherishes the stomach, increases appetite, and never takes it away. It never offends the head, or makes it heavy, or burthens the stomach; and it bears as much water again as wine will do. Those who have tasted it, commend its colour and flavour, as much as that of grapes. Its colour is golden, and mighty bright; and it is as sweet and good as the wine of Ciudad Real. There is little of it made, and so it lasts but eight months; for which reason 'tis not known how many years it would keep. It takes up as much labour and care as wine, in the making: if it be left to itself, and without fire, 'tis forty days be-

fore it ferments. It casts down a lee, and works out the frothy part at the top of the vessel; and for that reason care is taken to scum it as it boils, and then 'tis drawn off into another vessel. When 'tis turned to vinegar, its vinegar has a better taste and colour than wine vinegar; for it retains the colour of the fruit, which is very odoriferous and sweet.]

Thus far this author: from whence it may be inferred, that this land had good wine of its own; and it had also very good oil made of a seed called *Madi*; it is extremely well relished; but now 'tis not much in use, because that of olives is so common.

It is not possible to describe particularly, one by one, all the various sorts of trees that are bred in the woods and mountains of *Chile*; and it would take up a very large treatise, which is not my purpose; yet when we come to treat of the *Streights of Magellan*, we will speak of the cinnamon-tree, which is to be found there, and of the barks of some other trees of that soil, which have the same taste as the *east-india* pepper. All that I can say at present, is, that there are few of these trees that lose their leaves in winter, particularly those which grow wild in the woods, which are generally aromatick, and of a very fragrant smell; and of them, all the finest of this kind are bred in the territory of the *Conception*. I would not have believed it, if I had not seen it; for in travelling I met with lovely groves, which bordered the highways, and cast out so rich a smell from their leaves, that the flowers of jasmín did not appear sweeter. There are also abundance of myrtles and laurels, which grow in great groves naturally; and yet among them there are trees whose leaves exceed them infinitely in the perfume of their smell; insomuch that passing one's hand over them, one would think one had amber gloves on.

BOOK

BOOK II.

Treating of the second and third Part
of the Kingdom of CHILE.

CHAP. I.

Of the Islands of the Kingdom of Chile:

HAVING, for the better description of the kingdom of *Chile*, divided it into three parts, we have treated of the first and principal one, which is that which is properly called *Chile*, in which many things are said which are common to all the three parts; therefore in these two which remain, we shall take notice of that only which shall be peculiar to them, to avoid repetition.

Islands.

We come now to the second part, which are the islands which are spread all along the coast of the *South Sea*, as far as the *Streights of Magellan*; I say, they are many in number, and some of them very large ones; as that of *Sancta Maria*, *La Mocha*, *Juan Fernandes*, and, above all, that of *Chiloe*, in which is founded the city of *Castro*. Some make these islands fifty, some seventy leagues in length, and about six or seven leagues in breadth. In the same sea, or archipelago, there are many more, some of ten leagues, and others less; and in all, reckoning those that are within the *Streights of Magellan*, there are above two hundred discovered.

Del Soboral, De Muxillones, De los Paxaros, and many others.

Just over-against *Coquimbo* there are three, which are called *Del Soboral*, *De Muxillones*, and *De los Paxaros*, in thirty degrees latitude; two more in thirty three and forty degrees: there eight small ones just over-against *Val Paraíso*, which are called the islands of *Juan Fernandes*; who dying, left them to the *Jesuites*. Then follows the island *Quiriquina*, which is in the bay of the *Conception*. Just over-against *Arauco* is the island of *Sancta Maria*, in the thirty seventh degree; and in thirty eighth that of *La Mocha*. Hard by *Valdivia*, about forty three degrees, comes the archipelago of *Chiloe*, which is composed of forty islands; and hard by it is the province of *Calbuco*, in which there are twelve more. Those of *Los Chonos* are as many, in forty five degrees; and in fifty degrees are the eighty

islands discovered by *Pedro Sarmiento*, as shall be related hereafter. OVALLE.
1646.

The islands of *Chiloe* are reputed barren; but their soil is not really so, only the excessive rains choak the seed, and do not let the corn thrive; so that they are without wheat, wine, or oil, or any other plants which need much sun. The nature of the climate of this archipelago is such, that it rains almost all the year, so that only maize, or other such grains can ripen, that do not want so much sun. The nourishment or diet of the natives, is mostly of a root called *Papas*, well known over all the *West Indies*, of a good nourishment; and they grow there bigger than in any other place. They have besides some maize, some fish, and particularly shell-fish, which is excellent in those seas. They have few sheep, but very good poultry, as well as hogs, and some beef; with which, and what besides is brought to them from *St. Jago*, and the *Conception*, the *Spaniards*, both of the garrison and city of *Castro*, make a good shift. This city is the capital of the chief island; in which, and in the rest, there is great quantity of honey and wax made. And *Herrera* and other historians say, there are mines of gold upon the shore; and they remark it as an extraordinary thing, and hardly heard of in any other place.

The manufactures of these islands are the cloathing for the *Indians*, who have a kind of vest which they call *Macun*, and it is without sleeves, because their arms are naked; and over this they put a garment called *Choni*, which serves for a cloak, and is like that which painters give to the apostles in their pictures. They have another commodity from their woods, particularly of the plank they make of a tree, which is a cedar, and of which they have vast woods, and in them trees of a prodigious size; for frier *Gregory of Leon*, of the order of *St. Francis*, in his map of *Chile*, which he dedicates to the president *Don Luis Fernandez*

1646. *OVALLE. de Cordoua, Senior del Carpio*, says, that some of these trees are so big that they cannot be hardly encompassed by a rope of six yards long; and out of the wood of the boughs there has been made six hundred planks, of twenty five foot long, and two foot broad; and that which is considerable, is, that this plank is not fawed, but cut with axes; in which there is much more loss. This author deserves belief, as well from the experience of forty two years that he lived in *Chile*, as from having been definitor of his order. And what I have heard from the mouth of a colonel, who was both born and bred in that country, will serve to confirm this; which is, That if two men on horseback are on each side of the tree, when it lies along, they cannot see one another; for the body of the trunk hinders them. These planks are carried to *Chile* and *Peru*; and in exchange they bring back provisions to live on. The islands of *Chono* are yet poorer than these; because, that being nearer the pole, their summer is shorter, and their rains more copious, inso-much that they drown the earth, and hinder it from producing.

*Isles of
Chono.*

We have little knowledge of any other islands besides these of *Chiloe*; because the continent being so large, and yet not thoroughly peopled, there has been little occasion of inhabiting any more than some few of the islands; by which means there is but small discovery made of their qualities; though 'tis reasonable to think they resemble the land over-against which they lie.

*Isles of Juan
Fernandes.*

As for the islands of *Juan Fernandes*, I will relate what I find writ about them in *Theodore* and *John de Brye*, in their relation of the voyage of *John Scutten*: they say then, that these two islands are very high land; the least of the two, which is the westernmost, appeared to them barren, as being covered with wood, and very mountainous; though not landing on it, they could make no judgment of the inside of the island. The bigger island, which is the easternmost, is likewise mountainous, but has great variety of trees, and much grass, with which are fed great herds of swine and goats, bred from some few which were put on shore by *John Fernandes*, who began to cultivate these islands as his own; but he dying, and the *Spaniards* finding greater advantages upon the continent, they forsook those islands, which were out of all trade, leaving their stocks of cattle behind them, which now are infinitely multiplied.

Fine Island.

They say besides, that coming to this, which they call the *Fine Island*, they found a port very safe for their ships, having twenty or thirty fathom depth, the shore all sandy and even, with a delicate valley full of trees of all sorts, and wild boars, and other ani-

mals feeding in it; but they could not distinguish them, by reason of the distance they were at. They extol particularly a most beautiful fountain, which coming down from high rocks, rowls into the sea by different canals, which form a pleasant prospect, and its water is very sweet and agreeable. They saw also great store of seals, and other fish, which they caught in great plenty. In short, they were so in love with this island, for the good qualities they discovered even at its entrance, that they were very unwilling to leave it, though pressed in point of time.

I do not doubt, but this is a very pleasant situation; for in its temperature, and other properties, it must be very like *Val Paraiso* and *St. Jago*, because 'tis almost in the same degree west; and without doubt these islands will be peopled in time, when the continent grows populous, as it does every day; for then people will be seeking new habitations; but at present they only go thither sometimes to fish, to send it to *Peru*, where they have it not so plentifully.

The same authors, giving an account of the other *Dutch* squadron under *George Spilberg*, say, That they came to the island of *Mocha*, and found the north side of it plain and low, but the south full of rocks: they landed; and the good reception they found from the *Indians*, is an argument of the fertility of the place. Those *Indians* are a noble sort of people, and very good natured. When they had refreshed themselves much at their ease, they made provision of great store of sheep, who are very large, and in great plenty there, as likewise of hens, eggs, fruit, and other provisions. They treated the *Indians* on board, and shewed them their great guns, and their men in order for fighting: they presented them also with *European* commodities, such as hats, cloaths, axes, and things which they valued. After this, they set them again on shore; and the *Indians* made signs to them to go back to their ships, as they did.

But they were very differently received in the island of *Santa Maria*, where the vice-admiral landed with some of his men, and were invited by the *Indians* to eat; but from the ships they saw a great army coming down upon them, as they were going to sit down to table: whereupon they made signs to them to retreat to the port; which they did, and had just time to embark. But they likewise carried off about five hundred sheep, and other refreshments, having found the island very fertile and well provided, as well as very temperate, being about thirteen leagues south-west from the city of the *Conception*, about thirty seven degrees, and not above three leagues from *Arauco*; which makes some think, that formerly this island was fastened

fastened to the main land, and that the sea had in length of time made the division which now forms the bay of *Arauco*.

There is little to be said that is particular of all the other islands to the *Streights of Magellan*, since it has not pleased God to let them be peopled by *Spaniards*, and so give an entrance to the gospel; by which means the product and nature of them might be known, and many souls saved which inhabit them.

All that we know now of them, is, That in the voyage of *Pedro de Sarmiento to Spain*, being sent by the viceroy to chastise

Francis Drake, for his boldness for infesting those coasts; in his way, on this side the *Streights of Magellan*, he discovered a great archipelago of islands, which they told to the number of eighty, which he named by several names, and took possession of them in the name of his king. He also discovered more islands in fifty one degrees, to which he did the same. 'Tis known likewise, that in the *Streights* themselves there are many islands, some of which we shall mention when we treat of the *Streights of Magellan*.

OVALLE:
1646.

CHAP. II.

Of the Land called Tierra del Fuego.

THE land called *Tierra del Fuego*, (so famous in the relations and maps we have of the *Streights of Magellan*,) has deceived many by its name, people believing that it had been given it for some *Volcanos*, or burning mountains, or other subterraneous fires; but it is not so, for this name had no other occasion, than that the first navigators through the *Streights* discovered upon it many fires and great smoaks, made, as they supposed, by the numerous inhabitants of it; and so they called it the *Land of Fire*. There arose likewise another mistake from its great extent; for it was judged to be a great continent, of which in time the world was undeceived, as we shall see hereafter.

Situation of
Tierra del
Fuego.

This land, called *Tierra del Fuego*, is that which forms the south side of the *Streights of Magellan*, extending itself the whole length of the *Streights*, east and west, above one hundred and thirty leagues. Formerly, before the *Streights of St. Vincent*, otherwise call'd the *Streights of Le Maire*, were discover'd, this land was thought to be joined to some other great continent of the *Terra Australis*, which was supposed to join to *New Guinea*, or the islands of *Solomon*; and *Ortelius*, in his *Geography*, is of this opinion; but upon the discovery of the other *Streights of St. Vincent*, that doubt has been clear'd, several having gone through them to the *South Sea*; and among the rest, two caravels, set out by the king's command, in the year 1618. on purpose to view these *Streights*, which it was said had been discover'd by *James Le Maire*, which caravels were commanded by *Don Juan de More*.

1618.

These two vessels set out from *Lisbon* in the month of *October*, 1618. and being come to the east entrance of the *Streights of Magellan*, they passed by it, and run along all that coast, without finding any entrance, till they came to that of *Le Maire*, which they went through in less than one day's

time; after which they turn'd to the south, and afterwards to the west: they went round all the *Tierra del Fuego*, and sailing north, came to the west entrance of the *Streights of Magellan*, into which they enter'd, and sail'd through them to the *North Sea*. Having thus made a circle clear round the *Tierra del Fuego*, they proved it demonstratively to be an island separate from all other land. The same was done by Sir *Richard Haukins*, an *English* gentleman, who having pass'd the *Streight of Le Maire*, sail'd for five and forty days to the south, without finding any land contiguous to the *Tierra del Fuego*, but many islands, as is related by *Antonio de Herrera*, Chap. 27. of the description of the *West-Indies*. The same has been confirm'd by several, who being driven by storms from their intended course, have been forc'd to run towards the south pole; amongst the rest by *Francis Drake*, who having pass'd the *Streights of Magellan*, the sixth of *September*, 1572. and being got on the seventh, a degree from the *Streights*, was carried by a storm two hundred leagues to the south; and coming to an anchor in some of those islands, he there found that the sun being eight degrees from the tropick of *Capricorn*, the days were so long, that there was not above two hours night; from whence he inferr'd, that when the sun came to the tropick, there must be a perpetual day of twenty four hours. The same was experimented about two year ago by the fleet of general *Henry Brum*; which having pass'd the *Streights* in *April*, were by the force of ill weather carried into seventy two degrees, and cast anchor at the island of *St. Bernard*, to which they gave the name of *Barnevelt*; and it being about the entrance of winter, the days were not above three hours long, so that they expected they would still shorten till *June*, when the sun being furthest off from that hemisphere, would leave them in a total night; for this reason,

OVALLE. reason, and because of the hardness of the weather, which increas'd every day, they durst not winter in that island, as they had a mind, but after a fortnight's stay in it, weigh'd anchor, and sail'd for *Chile*. In which voyage they made but little advance, having always the wind a-head, insomuch that they were a whole month doubling one cape, and lost in the endeavour their *Tender*, in which was the best part of their provision.

So much for the islands belonging to the coast of *Chile*; but having also mention'd the islands of *Solomon* and *New Guinea*, to which antiently it was thought that the land of *Tierra del Fuego* was join'd, it will be well to say something of them.

The author who writes the best of them, is *Antonio de Herrera*, and from him is taken what *John* and *Theodore de Brye* say of them; which is thus:

Islands of
New Gui-
nea.

The islands of *New Guinea* run from something more than one degree south of the pole *antartick*, three hundred leagues east to the fifth or sixth degree; according to which reckoning, they fall about the west of *Paita*. The islands of *Solomon* fall to the west of *Peru*, about eight hundred leagues from its coast, and extend themselves between the seventh and twelfth degree: they are distant from *Lima* about fifteen hundred leagues: they are many, of a good size: there are eighteen principal ones, which are some three hundred, some two hundred, some one hundred, some fifty leagues, and less in compass. Between them and *Peru*, inclining to the land of *Chile*, there is another call'd the island of *St. Paul*, about the latitude of fifteen degrees, and about seven hundred leagues from the *terra firma*.

Isle of
St. Paul.

The fleet of *William Scowten* having run

along the coast of *Chile* in the year 1615. or 1616. from the *Streights of Magellan*, took their course to the west, when they were about the latitude of eighteen degrees, to try to find out some new island, and found one in fifteen degrees; which, according to their computation, was distant from the coasts of *Peru* about nine hundred leagues. After this they discover'd two more, which they call'd the *Cocoa* islands, by reason of the great plenty of that fruit that was there, that the inhabitants did use to drink the sweet liquor that was bred within the *Cocoas*, but when it was at an end, they made a shift with salt water; to which, being accusom'd from their youth, it did not hurt them. They say more, that the inhabitants go naked, though not quite; and that their way of being civil and saluting, is to give themselves blows upon their temples, which is the same as with us the pulling off the hat or cap. At first they laugh'd at the fire-arms, till they saw one fall much wounded, which undeceiv'd them, and convinced them that it was not only noise which proceeded from those arms. These islands are distant from *Peru*, 1510 *German* leagues, which are longer than the *Spanish* leagues, though not so long as the *Indian* ones. There were found also other islands in the latitude of twenty nine degrees, which perhaps were those which at first they call'd the islands of *Solomon*. Others say, that there are others more to the west, opposite to *Chile*. Whosoever is curious enough to know the particulars of all those islands, their temperature, inhabitants, their good and ill qualities, may find them in the above-cited authors, who treat of them more at large; for my intention, 'tis enough to say what I have reported.

CHAP. III.

Of the two Streights of Magellan and St. Vincent.

THE *Streight of Magellan* receiv'd its name from that man, who eternized his own, by being the first who discover'd and pass'd it. This was that famous *Portuguese* captain, *Hernando de Magellanes*, whose intrepid soul going almost beyond the true limits of all ordinary valour, seems to have border'd upon temerity and rashness, by engaging himself to discover a passage altogether unknown, and so narrow, that it was very dangerous for ships, being besides in the fifty fourth degree, which makes it very cold. This bold captain begun to enter the *Streight* by the *North Sea* the twenty seventh of *November*, in the year 1520. and in twenty days, which was a happy passage, he enter'd the *South Sea*;

from thence he sail'd to the *Philippine* islands, where he was kill'd in one of those islands called *Matan*, to which he went from another called *Zebu*, to fight against the king of the first, because he refused to subject himself to one of those kings who had turn'd christian; engaging him with more courage than conduct, and so he perish'd by the great number of his adversaries. His death was very much lamented, and he much miss'd in the discoveries of that new world; for, without doubt, if he had lived longer, he would have made great discoveries in the *terra firma* and islands.

To give a more certain account of this *Streight of Magellan*, I will make use of the memoirs of those who have pass'd it, and left

left relations of it, who, as eye-witnesses, were less subject to mistake. And first I will give those sworn relations given in *Castilla* by those who set sail from the *Corrunna*, by the emperor *Charles* the fifth's order, in six ships under the command of *Fray Garcia Jofre de Loaysa*, a knight of *Malta*, and born at *Ciudad Real*.

They say in their report, That the said *Streight* is a hundred leagues in length, from the cape of the *Eleven Thousand Virgins*, which is at the entrance of the *North Sea* to the Cape of *Desire*, which is at the entrance of the *South Sea*; and they say more, that they found in the *Streight* three great bays, of about seven leagues wide from land to land, but the entrances of them are not much more than half a league over; the first is about a league deep; the second about two leagues; the third, they say, is encompass'd with mountains of such a heighth, that they seem to be in competition with the stars, and the sun does not enter within them in the whole year; which was the cause of their enduring there an extream cold; for it snows almost continually, and the snow never melting by the sun-beams, it looked with a kind of bleuish colour. They say, moreover, that the nights were twenty hours long; they met with good water, and trees of several sorts, among which many cinnamon-trees; and that the leaves and boughs of the trees, though they appear'd green, yet burnt in the fire as if they were dry; that they found many good fishing-places, and saw many whales, (some mermaids,) many of the tunny-fish, sharks, cods, great store of pilchards and anchovies, very great oysters, and other shell-fish. That there were also very good harbours, with fifteen fathom water; and in the *Streights* itself above five hundred fathom, and no where any sands or shoals. They observ'd several pleasant rivers and streams, and saw that the tides of both seas came each of them above fifty leagues up the *Streight*, and meet about the middle of it with a prodigious noise and formidable shock. Though a *Portuguese* captain, who had pass'd this *Streight*, told me, That these tides were only some high floods, which last a month, or thereabouts, as the winds blow; which makes the sea sometimes rise to a great heighth, and at other times fall as much, leaving the shoar dry for a great way; and the ebbing is sometimes so fast, that ships are left dry, as this captain's ship was, so that he was forc'd to dig his way out to get into deeper water. They found several other entrances in this *Streight*; but for want of provision they could not stay to search them: they lost one ship off the *Virgins Cape*; and they had scarce enter'd the *Streights*,

VOL. III.

when a storm blew them back to the river *OVALLE* of *St. Ildefonso*, and to the port of *Santa Croce*, where they found serpents of various colours, and stones that were good for stanching of blood; all this may be seen in *Antonio de Herrera*, in the second tome, *Decade 3.* and the ninth book, *Fol. 335.* and it does not disagree with the other relation of *Magellan's* voyage, though this makes the straightest part yet less, allowing it not above a musquet-shot over, and from one entrance to another it reckons a hundred leagues, the land on both sides being very rich and beautiful.

This is, in short, the relation given in to the king. There are some other authors, who neither make the *Streight* so long, nor do they make the narrowest part so straight; for some allow but fourscore and ten leagues, or less, to its length; but yet 'tis probable, that the first give the most credible account, because they examin'd it with such care and punctuality, in order to inform his majesty. All agree in one thing, which is, in the good qualities of the sea, land, and islands of the *Streight*, as well as of the shoar on both sides, and of the good parts that are in it, and of some particularly so secure, that the ships rid in them without being fastened, being as safe as if they had been in a box.

Among the rest the *Hollanders* celebrate much the twenty fifth port, call'd the *Famous*; and it is so much so, that *George Spilberg*, their general, gave it that name, for the excellent reception they found there: they saw the whole earth about cover'd with various fruits of various colours, and of excellent taste. To delight them the more, there was a fine brook of excellent water that fell from a high rock, and water'd all the valley entering into the port; and besides these five and twenty ports or harbours, there were many others in the remaining part of the *Streight*, which might be a third of it, all which were very remarkable.

There is a harbour call'd *De la Pimienta*, *Harbour* or the *Pepper Harbour*, for the sake of some trees they found in it, whose barks had a most aromattick smell, and a taste of pepper, something more burning and quick than that of the *East-Indies*. When the *Nodales* pass'd this way, they gather'd a great deal of this bark; and authors say, that when they brought it to *Seville*, it was so valued there, that it was sold for sixteen ryals, or two crowns a pound.

The same authors report, that they found cinnamon-trees, which bore good cinnamon; and in the second narrow passage some others, that bear a sort of black fruit, of most excellent taste and favour. In other places they saw most beautiful woods

O

and

OVALLE. and groves, pleasant plains, agreeable
 1646. valleys, and intervals of great beauty,
 with high mountains; some cover'd with
 snow, from whence there descended lovely
 streams; others all cloathed with greens of
 various sorts; and in them they descried
 many animals going to and fro, such as
 deer, ostriches, and others, as also great
 variety of most beautiful birds of all co-
 lours; and among the rest they kill'd one
 so large, that measuring one of its wings,
 they found it above a yard long; and they
 were so tame that they flew to the ships,
 and suffer'd themselves to be handled: they
 found also another sort of large birds, which
 they call'd sea-geese, every one of which,
 after they had been plum'd and pull'd,
 weigh'd eight pounds of *Castile*; and they
 were so numerous, that the ground was co-
 ver'd with them, so that they kill'd what
 quantities they pleas'd. They saw another
 sort of bird, much of the shape of a pid-
 geon, all white, only with red bills, and red
 feet; all which were a great entertainment
 to them as they sail'd along. They com-
 mend also the harbour, which they call
Most Beautiful, where the city of *St. Phi-*
lip was founded; there they saw the traces
 of several animals, which us'd to come to
 drink in those chrystal fountains. After
 the third streight place, there is to be seen
 a most excellent harbour, call'd the *Shell-*
Harbour, by reason of the vast quantities of
 oysters and other shell-fish that they found
 there, which sufficed to feed the whole
 fleet several days, carrying away with them
 a good provision likewise for their voyage,
 all owning that they were better than those
 of *Europe*.

Isles of St.
Lawrence
and St. Ste-
phen.
Penguin
Islands.

Holy King's
Island.

Isles of Se-
valdo.

There are found in the great canal of the
 streight several islands, which are as esti-
 mable as the *terra firma*; they are generally
 in the widest part, where the sea is seven
 or eight leagues over; the chief are those of
St. Lawrence and *St. Stephen*, otherwise
 called the island of *Barnevelt*. Before they
 came to these, they found other islands,
 which they call'd the *Penguin Islands*, for
 the great quantity of that sort of birds
 that are bred there. There is another,
 call'd the *Holy King's Island*, which is in a
 river, which enters into the streights, and
 they saw in it many seals. Others of these
 islands are nam'd *Sevaldo*, from the name
 of him that discover'd them, near which
 there were store of the penguin birds, and
 abundance of whales. After having pass'd
 the second streight, there are still more

islands, the first is call'd of the *Angels*, and *Isles of*
 is full of the birds we have mention'd. The *Angels*.
 second is nam'd the island of the *Patagoons*, *Isle of Pa-*
 or gyants, because they saw there some of *tagoons*,
 them. Near the shell-port there are other *and several*
 eight islands; and a little before the en- *others.*
 trance into the south-sea, there are several
 other islands, which must be very little,
 for the streights are there very narrow.
 Some may desire to know, whether, besides
 this entrance of the streight of *Magellan*,
 there are any other, by which ships may
 sail from the north-sea to the south. Touch-
 ing which, the relation of *George Spilberg*
 says, that there is one by the cape, which
 they call'd *Prouvaert*. Some *English* like-
 wise, who have sail'd that way, are of the
 same opinion; for which they cite father
Acosta, of our society, in his *Oriental History*,
 translated by *John-Hugh Linscot*, Chap. 10.
 in the end; as may be seen in the already-
 cited *John* and *Theodore de Brye*, who add,
 that many other authors do agree in this
 opinion; and that those of *Spilberg's* fleet,
 before they came to the streight, saw this
 opening on the north-side, but they did
 not dare to go into it, because they had
 express orders to pass the streight of *Ma-*
gellan; and besides, that which added to
 this resolution, was the observation they
 made of the great force with which the
 waves met each other at this opening, in-
 so much that the sea seem'd to boil.

This is all that I have met with in authors
 about this opinion, which even *John* and
Theodore de Brye look upon as false; be-
 cause neither the *Spaniards* nor *Dutch* ever
 saw this second canal; but rather that the
 whole land of *Fuego* is one great continued
 island, which they prove by the relation of
 the navigation made by the *Nodales*, who
 were sent to search for the *Streight of St.*
Vincent, and who went round the *Tierra*
del Fuego, without finding any such opening,
 or any other than that of *Magellan* and *St.*
Vincent; and yet I am of another opinion,
 and hold the first for certain; and this does
 not contradict the opinion of *Spilberg*, who
 does not say, that the opening he saw was
 on the south, but on the north side, towards
 the land of *Chile*; and so, though the land
 of *Fuego* be an island, it does not follow
 that there may not be an entrance on the
 north side. But let us leave that to time
 to make out, and say something of the
Streight of St. Vincent, which is the second
 passage from the *North* to the *South Sea*.

C H A P. IV.

The same Matter is continued, and the Usefulness of the Commerce between Chile and the Philippine Islands is made out.

1619. **I**N the year 1619. the king sent, in the month of *October*, the two caravels which I mentioned above, to search the *Streight* of *St. Vincent*, because about that time it was reported in *Spain*, that *James Le Maire* had discovered it. These two ships sailed to the bay of *St. Gregory*, which is near the east entrance of the *Streight* of *Magellan*; from whence they sailed along all that coast, where they saw and conversed with a sort of giants, who were at least the head higher than any of the *Europeans*; and they exchanged for scizars and other baubles gold, which it seems is the product of that country: after which they sailed south-west round the *Tierra del Fuego*, till they came to the mouth of this new *Streight*, which they called the *Streight* of *St. Vincent*; and before they entered it, they sailed along the shore of this new discovered land, keeping it always on the right hand, their course east-north-east, as it tends.

They sailed about thirty leagues; and not having discovered all that way, nor as far as they could see, any opening or inlet, they returned to the opening of the *Streight* of *St. Vincent*; and entering into it, went through it in less than one day, it not being above seven leagues in length; and being entered afterwards into the *South Sea*, they followed the same land to the east, and south-west thirty leagues more; and seeing it was one continued coast, closed up with mountains of great height, they durst not go any further, beginning to want provisions; and so thinking that this land might reach as far as the *Cape* of *Good-Hope*, they left it, and sailed to the west entrance of the *Streight* of *Magellan*; which they entered, and went through to the *North Sea*, returning that way to *Spain*, to give an account of what they had discovered, having made a very fortunate voyage, and not lost one man, nor had any sickness, all that climate being very like that of *Europe*, and particularly to the cold part of it. This made the king give order for the setting out of eight sail more, to carry this way to the *Philippine* islands all the relief necessary of soldiers, artillery, and tackling for ships, resolving henceforward that they should always go this way, as being shorter, easier, and of less charge and danger. This was the opinion of *Michael de Cardoel*, and the other pilots chosen for this expedition, who obliged themselves to sail to the *Philippines* (bating extraordinary accidents)

in eight or nine months; for having once passed the *Streights*, if they had the wind and currents favourable, they hoped to get to the *Philippines* in two months; because from *Chile* to those islands, there is no reason, as in other navigations, to wait for certain seasons and times of the year; for all that voyage being to be made within the tropicks, there is no danger of winter; but one may fail it at any time of the year.

The *Dutch* authors already cited, treating of this subject, add these words: [“ In truth this is a great conveniency to mankind, to be able to go from *Europe* to these islands in so short a time, with all the health and safety of the sailors; it being otherwise in going by the *Cape* of *Good Hope*, where the diversity of winds is to be observed, some of them being so contrary, as to hinder absolutely the voyage; so that it lasts sometimes fifteen or sixteen months. Besides, this course is so subject to diseases, that often they bury half their men in the sea, as happened to *Girard Reinst*, who was sixteen months getting to *Bantam*, which is not above half way to the *Philippines*, and yet lost a quarter of his men: *Adrian Wreuter* was nineteen months getting to *Bantam*, and lost out of the ship, called the *Fleissingue*, one hundred and sixty three out of two hundred: the same happened to the other three ships of that Squadron.”] Thus far these *dutch* authors; who add, That the ship *Concordia*, going the other way, arrived at the *Moluccas* without losing a man. And if they say true, and make out that it is better to sail this way to their *Batavia*, how much better is it for the *Spaniards*, who drive a trade with *Peru* and *Chile*, the distance being much less, and having for friends all the ports of *Chile*, if they won’t go so high as *Peru*, which the *Dutch* have not? Neither would it be a small advantage to exchange in those ports the merchandizes of *Europe* with their product, which is so wanting in the *Philippine Islands*, and all those parts of the east. Every one may find their account in this trade; the *Spaniards*, without running the danger of sickness in those unhealthy climates of *Cartagena*, *Panama*, and *Puerto Bello*, might find as much vent for the *European* commodities; *Chile* and *Peru* would have all goods from *Spain* much cheaper than they have them now by the *terra firma*; the charges then would be

OVALLE. be three times less; and, at the same time,
 1646. they would help off the product of those
 parts; as from *Peru* they might load corn,
 wine, and oil; and if they did not care to
 go so far, they might have the same things
 from *Chile*, and cheaper, besides copper,
 hides, almonds, and other commodities proper
 to *Europe*: so that 'tis clear this would
 be a very advantageous intercourse for the
Philippines, who want all these commodities
 so much.

Neither would the trade of *New Spain*
 receive any damage at all from this; for
 those countries could not have them from
Peru and *Chile* so easily as from *Europe*;
 and so *Spain* would send less, only so much
 as is carried to the *Philippines* from *New*
Spain, which cannot be much; for the
 charge of carrying those *european* commodities
 from *Vera Cruz*, to be embarked again
 for the *Philippines*, is very considerable,
 it being at least one hundred and sixty
 leagues by land from the *Vera Cruz* to *Acapulco*,
 which is the port where they are to
 be embarked; after which they have a navigation
 of three months; and then there
 being not always conveniences of shipping
 in *Acapulco*, those commodities are kept so
 long that they are spoiled; and 'tis seen by
 experience how little of this trade turns to
 account: but it would be otherwise if these
 commodities were carried from *Chile*, since
 in two or three months, always in a temperate
 climate, they might sail with a constant
 south wind, which blows all the summer
 infallibly, and so bring the product of *Chile*
 in a good condition to the *Philippines*. This
 commerce, though it would accommodate
 all parties, yet, it must be confessed, it would
 be most beneficial to *Chile*, which would
 thereby have more vent for its product, and
 acquire more people to cultivate its natural
 fertility.

There has been two obstacles to this project,
 which have hinder'd its taking: the first is,
 the difficulty of passing the *Streight* of
Magellan, because it being so much elevated
 towards the pole, it cannot be passed but
 in certain months of the year, which if
 those who attempt it do not hit, they are
 in danger of perishing, as in effect it has
 happened to some squadrons of ships, as I
 shall relate in the next chapter; though
 others have passed it very luckily in its proper
 season, the *Streight* itself having, as we
 have seen, many good harbours and shelters
 for ships.

The second obstacle is the same that
 keeps the port of *Buenos Aires* from being
 frequented, (for else all the treasure of *Peru*

might be sent that way;) and it is, That
 the course of trade is settled the other way,
 notwithstanding the great charge the crown
 is at to have two fleets, the one in the *South*,
 the other in the *North Sea*, only to secure
 this passage; and that with the loss of so
 many *Spaniards* lives, that in the hospital
 of *Panama* only, there was buried, as they
 told me when I went that way in the year
 1630. above fourteen thousand persons; 1630.
 and what must we guess then in the ports
 of *Carthagen* and *Puerto Bello*, which
 have been the sepulchre of so many *Europeans*.

Notwithstanding all these mischiefs, this
 way is continued to maintain those cities
 already founded in those parts; though it
 is most certain, that the same end of carrying
 the silver to *Spain* might be attained
 by one only fleet with less danger of the sea.
 By that course the galleons would sail always
 in deep water, and not run the hazards they
 do between *Carthagen* and the *Havana*,
 between which places they are fain to found
 all the way, and keep the lead going, to
 avoid the many shoals that are in those seas,
 and in the canal of *Babama* afterwards:
 besides that, the dangers of sickness would
 be avoided; for the *Spaniards* find by
 experience, that at *Buenos Aires* they are
 healthy, that being in the temperate climate
 corresponding to that of *Europe*.

And for the same reason the navigation
 between *Chile* and the *Philippines* is not
 put in use; because the course of things
 being once settled one way, 'tis very hard
 to change them, though to a better. I shall
 not pursue this matter any further, because
 it seems to touch the state and government,
 which is not my design: perhaps time will
 bring all things to pass; and that those of
Chile themselves will venture to find out
 this vent for their product. All consists in
 trying; for the advantages on both sides
 would be so manifest, that the sweet of
 them would soon make the way easy, and
 that trade would wonderfully enrich *Chile*
 and *Peru*, since they might bring back to
 those kingdoms all the commodities of *China*
 and *Japan*; and that without carrying any
 gold or silver, which might be preserved
 all for *Europe*. Thus the greatest part of
 this new world being enriched by its own
 product, the king's revenue will be the
 greater, as well as the returns in gold and
 silver the greater; and all things thus well
 accommodated, the service of god, and the
 divine cult and worship would be better
 carried on.

CHAP. V.

Of the Fleets; some of which have been lost, and some have happily passed the Streight of Magellan.

Four of the
bishop of
Placentia's
ships lost
in the
Streight of
Magellan,

AMONG the fleets which have been lost in the *Streight of Magellan*, the first was that of four ships set out by the bishop of *Placentia* for the *Molucca* islands; which having got to the *Streight* with good weather, and being enter'd into it about twenty leagues, there rise from the west a storm, which blowing directly a-head, forced three of the ships ashore, they not having room to turn or run before it; but all the men were saved. The fourth had better fortune; for going before the storm, she got out of the *Streight*; and when the foul weather was over, came into the *Streight* again, where the other ships were lost, and found the men; who had saved themselves on shore; who presently made signs and cries to be taken on board; but they with hearts full of grief answered them, *What would you have? We cannot relieve you, for the provisions we have on board are not sufficient for us, and so we may fear to perish all of us together.* They could not say to them the other words of the gospel, *Go rather to those who sell*, because they were in a desert country, where they had no remedy, but to send sighs to heaven, accompanied with inexpressible tears and cries, capable of moving the stones themselves. Thus they left them, pursuing their voyage, much afflicted to be forced to forsake them, and not be able to do any thing for them; but these are accidents and hard cases belonging to the sea-faring men.

The *Cessares*, supposed to be Spaniards originally.

'Tis not known to this day what has become of these men; only there is a tradition, that a great way within land, on the continent of *Chile*, near the *Streight*, there is a nation call'd *Cessares*, who were endeavour'd to be discover'd by Don *Hieronimo Luis de Cabrera*, governor of *Tucuman*, about eight and twenty years ago, with a good army rais'd at his own charge; but his diligence was in vain, as we have marked already, and told the cause of his mis-carrying. 'Tis thought, and 'tis very probable, these *Cessares* may be descended from those *Spaniards* who were saved in this shipwreck; because it was possible, that seeing themselves without any other recourse, they might go on into the *terra firma*, where contracting alliance with some *Indian* nation, they may have multiplied, and the fame of them may have reached the neighbouring nations, and so on to others. This is certain, that this tradition is much kept up, that there is in those parts an *European* nation called *Cessares*. Some say, that

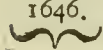
VOL. III.

there has been heard the sound of bells, and they have founded cities where they live; but, in fine, there is no certainty of all this. A gentleman born in *Chiloe*, and who has been a colonel in those parts, gave me in writing a relation of several traditions and informations of great numbers of people that inhabit the land within, and who have much gold. There has been made several attempts to discover them, though all have miscarried for want of provisions, or by other accidents, which in time may be remedied when it pleases God. And at this very time I have receiv'd letters, which acquaint me, That father *Hieronimo de Montemayor*, apostolical missionary of that archipelago of *Chiloe*, had enter'd into the *terra firma* in company of captain *Navarro*, a man very famous in those parts; and that they discover'd a nation, which 'tis thought are these *Cessares*, because they are a nation of white complexion, and fresh cherry cheeks, and who in their shape and disposition of body, seem to be men of mettle; and that they had brought some of them along with them, to endeavour to inform themselves of that which they so much desire. This is all the father writ at that time, because the ship could not stay, and there is but one ship every year bound for those parts; so he was forced to refer himself to the next conveniency, to inform me more particularly of the original and descent of this nation; so that this is all that at present we can say of this nation of the *Cessares*, which 'tis possible may come from these shipwreck'd men; or else they may descend from some *Dutch*, who may have been shipwreck'd in the same place, or thereabouts; and their complexion seems to fortify this conjecture; besides, that they speak a language which no body then present could understand; or there may be both *Spaniards* and *Flemings*. 'Tis thought we shall not be long without knowing the truth, and so I continue my narration. The second fleet which miscarried in the *Streight*, was that which was set out about two and twenty years ago, under general *Ayala*, a gentleman of high birth and valour; who going from *Spain* to *Chile*, dealt with his majesty for a relief of men, which he was to carry through the *Streight of Magellan*, without landing any where else; but just as they were entering it, they were all cast away, so as to this day there has not been any account of them, except of the vice-admiral's ship, under the command

A Spanish
fleet lost
in the
Streight.

P

mand

1646.  OVALLE. mand of *Francisco de Mandujava*; for having lost sight of the admiral in the storm, she was carried afore the wind to the port of *Buenos Aires*, where he landed the men, and marched them over land to *Chile*. I heard some of the men talk of this matter; and they used to blame the general very much, for having gone about to enter the *Streight* when the time of the year was so far advanc'd, particularly having been advis'd in *Brasil*, where he touch'd to winter there, which he refus'd to do, for fear his people should desert him, and so he and they all perished.

These accidents seem to have made this passage less practicable; but yet we know that many have pass'd this *Streight* with little danger, and some with great felicity. Eight fleets are mentioned by *John* and *Theodore de Brie*, as well *Spaniards* as foreigners, who have pass'd this *Streight*; and though some have had bad weather, yet there is no doubt but time and good observations may make it more feasible; particularly there being so many good harbours and bays in this *Streight*, where ships may shelter themselves, and let the storms blow over.

C H A P. VI.

Of the Province of Cuyo.

Cuyo, the
third pro-
vince of
Chile.

AFTER having treated of the two first parts of the kingdom of *Chile*, we must say something now of the third, which contains those large provinces of *Cuyo*, which are on the other side of the *Cordillera*, towards the east. We have already described their situation and extent, let us treat now of the nature of them. And to begin with their ill qualities; 'Tis a wonderful thing to consider that there being nothing between them and *Chile*, but the high mountains of the *Cordillera*, yet they are so different in their qualities. We have already mention'd some; but we may say, that as to their temperature, they are in every thing entirely opposite; for first the heats are excessive and intolerable in summer; and for that, as well as for the vast quantity of bugs, or punaises, which are there, some very small, and others as big as bees, one can hardly sleep a-nights in the houses, and therefore the people all sleep in their gardens and court-yards. There are almost perpetual thunders and lightnings, and many poisonous reptiles and insects, though not so many as in *Tucuman* and *Paraguay*. There are likewise a species of *Mosquitos*, or gnats, no bigger than the points of needles, and as sharp in their sting, though themselves are almost imperceptible; they get into the hair of one's beard, and one cannot be rid of them any other way, than by killing them.

Remarks
on Cuyo.

These are the evil qualities of the land of *Cuyo*; let us now mention the good ones. The land is so fertile, that in many things it exceeds even the richest soil of *Chile*; the crops are better, the fruits larger, and of better taste, by reason of the great heat, which ripens them more: there is good store of corn, wine, flesh, all sorts of fruits, roots, and herbs of *Europe*; as also great quantities of olive-yards and almond-grounds; so that the only essential difference between it and *Chile*, is the many venomous animals, and the thunders and rains in summer;

though to make some amends, if *Chile* exceeds in summer, *Cuyo* has the advantage in winter; for though the cold is sharp, yet it is not with such clouds, nor such snow and rains, as in *Chile*; but rather the weather is serene, and the sun beautiful and clear, without any dark weather, which makes it very temperate.

There is no sea-fish in this province, it *Cuyo, an* being very far from any sea; but it has *inland* ponds, which are called the ponds of *Guanacache*, where they catch great quantities of trouts, as they call them, which are very big, like the *Savalos* of *Seville*, but much better without comparison; for they have no small bones, and are of a higher relish, and a very healthy food.

Besides the fruits of *Europe*, this country has several very good of its own. The first is called *Chanales*, which are like filberts or small nuts; only the difference is, that that which is to be eaten is not within, but on the outside of the shell: the other is the *Algaroba*, of which they make bread so sweet, that it nauseates those who are not used to it. All *Tucuman*, as far as *Buenos Aires* and *Paraguay*, are provided from hence with figs, pomegranates, dried peaches, and dried grapes, apples, oil, and excellent wine, of which they have abundance, which they carry over those vast plains, called the *Pampas*, (where for many leagues together there is not a tree, nor a stone to be found,) in large carts, such as they use here in *Rome*; and they are a caravan of them together, to defend themselves from certain *Indians*, who are enemies, and often attack them by the way.

Some years ago they began to discover here rich mines of silver, the same of which drew people from *Potosi* when I left *Chile*, because they were reputed to be richer, and of more profit than those of *Potosi*, all provisions being more abounding and cheaper too. These mines were also said to be in a plain country, where carts might come easily. They write me word likewise, That there

there has since been discover'd gold mines of a prodigious richness. 'Tis true indeed, that in this matter of mines, there is a great difference between assaying of them in little parcels, or in great ones; for often the oar that promises much, yields but little, when the assay comes to be made in great. This is a common observation in mines; and if these of *Cuyo* do not prove extraordinary rich, there will hardly come any people from abroad to them, particularly from *Chile*, where they have already so many and good ones, of such a known profit, and yet they do not work them, the people being more profitably employed in husbandry, which turns to greater account.

I will give here an extract of a letter which I received in *Rome* this year from father *Juan del Poço* of our company, a person of great piety, and worthy of credit, who is at present in the college of *Mendoza*, the chief of all those of the province of *Cuyo*, and it is thus: ["The greatest news here, is about the mines which are begun to be discovered, which if it holds as they relate, it will be the greatest thing in the world: they are of gold, which is seen among the silver oar: there are come very understanding miners from *Potosi*, who cannot give over commending them. There come people from *St. Jago*, to work them, and captain *Lorenzo Soares* is named for *Alcalde Mayor* of these mines."] There are others who write the same thing; and there is no doubt to be made, but that if they can have people, that country will be one of the richest of all the *Indies*; for its great fertility wants nothing but people to cultivate and consume its product. This will make the three cities of that province, which are that of *Mendoza*, that of *St. Juan*, and that of *St. Luis* of *Loiola*, increase mightily, which since their first foundation have been at a stand, by reason of the neighbourhood of *Chile*, which has kept them down; many of the first inhabitants of *Cuyo* having left it to go to *Chile*, as being more temperate, and more abounding with the conveniences of life; for the same reason that we see in other parts most people flock to the capitals of a kingdom, as is evident in *Naples* and other great cities. But if the *Spanish* inhabitants increase as they have done hitherto, there will be enough for all these parts; and already some of *St. Jago* have settled, and married at *St. Juan* and *Mendoza*; neither can it be otherwise, for the people of *Chile* are beginning to be so straiten'd, that they cannot have all the conveniences of being at large, and so are forced to seek them abroad.

And 'tis most certain, that the conveniences of this province are very great; and their not appearing so, is owing only to their neighbourhood to *Chile*, in comparison of

which these countries appear a place of banishment, and is look'd upon as the most rigorous that can be given any one in *Chile*; because, to say truth, the difference is very great, considering the proprieties of each place; but if we consider *Cuyo*, without comparing it, it is not only a good place, but surpasses many others, where nevertheless the inhabitants think themselves very happy, though wanting the abundance of *Cuyo*, where the flesh is very substantial and savoury, and great abundance of game, as also of pork, turkeys, ducks, hens, and other tame fowl.

The wines are very generous, and of so much strength, that though they be carried three or four hundred leagues over those plains, and the intolerable heats of the *Pampas*, and that by oxen, yet they come good to *Buenos Aires* and other places, and are preserved with the same facility, as long as one pleases, without spoiling; and they are in such quantity, that all the provinces round are supplied with them, nay, as far as *Paraguay*, which is three or four hundred leagues more. The bread is excellent, so is the oil, and all sorts of pulse and gardening; the fish better than the sea-fish; the flax and hemp as good as that of *Chile*; the materials for tanning very good; and, in short, it has all necessaries for life, with as much advantage as any other country.

This being thus, and even more than I relate, what is there wanting to this land, or what are its blots? *punaises, thunder, lightning, hail*. And what other country has not some of these? Shall we say, because God has exempted *Chile* by a singular providence from these things, that therefore *Cuyo* is an ill country? No; for then we must condemn most countries where these afflicting circumstances are found. And though it must be own'd, that in the summer the heats are great, yet they do not exceed those of *Tucuman*, *Buenos Aires*, and *Paraguay*; and they are inferior to those of *Brasil*, and those of *Carajas*, *Cartagena*, *Puerto Bello*, and *Panama*, as I myself have experienced in some of those places. And these parts of *Cuyo* have some amends made them from the neighbourhood of the snow; for the city of *Mendoza* is not above a league from the *Cordillera*, which is full of it; and likewise the good qualities of the air do something moderate the heat; for it is so healthy, that it never hurts any body by being in it, which makes them sleep in their gardens abroad, without any apprehension, except it be of some sudden shower which does often happen in summer; for on a sudden, though the heavens be clear and bright, it grows cloudy, and falls a raining with great fury; but this may be easily remedied; and likewise the thunders and thunderbolts might be avoided, which are the

OVALLE 1646. the things which fright those of *Chile* most, they being so little used to them; and therefore at the very name of *Cuyo*, they think the heavens are falling upon their heads, or that the punaises, and other nauseous vermin are never to leave them; so that no greater mortification can be proposed to an inhabitant of *Chile*, than to go to live in *Cuyo*. And besides all this, the vast snows which fall on the mountains, shut up the passes, and hinder all communication or intercourse; so that in five or six months

one cannot receive a letter, though those two provinces are not above thirty or forty leagues asunder, that is, the breadth of that chain of mountains called the *Cordillera*. This therefore is that which discredits *Cuyo*; and if it had been further off from *Chile*, it would have had a better name; but it is with that, as with two loaves, which though both good, yet if one be whiter and better, no body will touch the other, the best being always most pleasing.

C H A P. VII.

Of the Confines of the Province of Cuyo, and particularly of its Easterly Bounds, the Pampas, and of the River of Plata.

Situation of Cuyo.

THE confines of this province of *Cuyo* to the west, are *Chile*; and to the east, the *Pampas*, or vast plains of the *Rio de la Plata*, and part of *Tucuman*; which reaching as far as those of *Rioca*, and the mountains of *St. Michael*, with all the rest as far as *Salta* and *Jujuy*, make the north side of it; and to the south, it has the *Streights of Magellan*. All that lies within these bounds are open plains, reaching so far, that there is not so much as any stop to the eye; but it is like a sea, and the sun seems to rise and set out of the earth; and at its rising, it is sometime that it gives but little light; as also it loses some of its beams before it be quite out of sight when it sets. The way of travelling in those plains is with very high carts, which they cover over neatly with hoops, over which are cow-hides, with doors to go in and out; and these are drawn by oxen: there are also windows to give a free passage to the air, and on the bottom one makes one's bed with so much conveniency, that often travellers sleep out the whole journey, and feel not any of the inconveniencies which attend it. Generally they set out about two hours before sun-set, and travel all night, till it be an hour or two after sun-rising; so that a traveller just wakes when he comes to the baiting-place. This must be owned to be a great conveniency; because one may also walk on foot sometimes, in the cool, before one lies down, and so one comes merrily and easily to one's journey's end.

Manner of travelling.

Hunting.

There is also another entertainment which helps to pass the time pleasantly, and that is hunting: and for this end some carry horses empty, and dogs on purpose; and there is game enough both of hare and venison: for there are herds of *Guanacos*, of two or three hundred. The dog follows them; and the young-ones, not able to follow, are left behind, which the hunter knocks on the head with a club he carries,

without lighting from his horse, and returns to the carts loaden with venison, which serve for provision as well as entertainment. At other times they follow the partridges, francolins, or the bird called *Quiriquincho*. But to all this there are abatements and mixtures of trouble: the first is, the mighty heat in summer; for which reason, lest the oxen should be stifled with it, they travel in the night; and when they come to halt, or bait in the day time, 'tis in places where there is not so much as a tree, under whose shade one may rest; nor is there any other shade than that of the cart, and some coverlet upon it; for to go into it, is like going into an oven. But this is not all the way, there being some pleasant running streams and rivers bordered with green willow-trees, which very much mitigate the fury of the heat. The greatest inconvenience that I perceived in that journey, was the want of water; which is so great, that we were forced to provide ourselves, when we arrived at any of these rivers, for many days journey; for there is no other, except sometimes some plashe remaining of rain-water; and that is all green, and can serve only for the oxen: and yet this is rare too; for these are often dried up to mud, and then one is forced to double the day's journey, and march as far again; so that the cattle is almost dead with thirst. I have seen sometimes, on these occasions, the oxen take a run as if they were mad or possessed; for they know by instinct, a league or two before they come at it, the places where it is, as if they smelled it; so there is no stopping those that are loose; and even those who are at the yoke, make what haste they can; and when they get to the water, they raise the mud so by their haste, that they drink as much mud as water.

When this happens, while there is any of the water left that was taken at the river,

and

and carried in carts, the misfortune is the less; but when that water is already spent, the people suffer extremely: for though most commonly some one man is sent before to take up some water of the clearest, before the oxen trouble it, yet they make such haste, that that prevention most commonly miscarries; and then we are fain to stop our noses, and shut our eyes to drink, and divert even our imagination, if we can. And to all this there is no remedy, but from heaven, as it happened to me once, that it pleased god to send us a shower in our greatest extremity, which filled several wells, and there was enough for us and our cattle, as also to carry away; for which we thanked the divine majesty, acknowledging his great mercy to us in so pressing circumstances.

This suffering would not be so great, if there were any towns and villages in the way; for there are little lakes, by which they might settle, which though some years they yield no water, yet it is to be come at by a little digging, and that not very deep; and if there were people in those deserts, wells might be made, or the rain-water gathered in cisterns, as it is practised in several other places. But these plains are so vast, that they can hardly be peopled, being extended for several hundred leagues; and besides, there being no trade settled of any importance in those parts, there cannot be inns nor places of shelter settled; and so at present, whoever travels that way, must carry every thing; for when once one is set out, there is no addition to be made; and

therefore all is to be provided, more or less, according to one's ability; and that must be at least a fortnight's allowance, and some times twenty or thirty days, till one comes to some inhabited place. This is the manner of travelling in the plains of *Cuyo*, and *Tucuman*, and the *Rio Plata*, where in many leagues one does not see a hill, nor a stone, nor a tree, but continual plains; and if, to dress your victuals, you have not the foresight to carry some wood, all the remedy is to gather the cow-dung, which serves the turn very ill. In some places of this province of *Cuyo*, there are woods near the rivers, from whence may be had materials for building; and hard by the *Cordillera* there is a sort of tree that breeds incense. I brought some of it to *Rome*, and the druggists told me, that it was finer than the ordinary, consumed in churches. There grows there also the herb called *Xarilla*, which is very hot, and a good medicine, as we have said already. There are many others, of which I cannot give so particular an account, as not having made any stay in those parts; neither am I in a place where I can advantage myself of those relations, that others might give me; and which may serve for larger histories than mine, I pretending only to brevity. Therefore let this suffice for an account of the situation, soil, heavens, proprieties, trees, plants, fruits, metals, flocks, fountains, rivers, sea-fishes, and birds, in all the three parts or divisions of the kingdom of *Chile*. Let us now say a word of its inhabitants, the old *Indians*, who have possessed it all formerly.

OVALLE.
1646.

BOOK III.

Of the Inhabitants of the Kingdom of
CHILE.

C H A P. I.

*Of the first that peopled America, and their Antiquity.*OVALLE.
1646.

THE knowledge of the first inhabitants of the kingdom of *Chile*, depends necessarily upon that of the first inhabitants of *America*, which is not easy to be made out. If we should take the opinion of the *indian Guancas*, near the valley of *Xavia*, they would certainly affirm, that which is a constant tradition among the natives of *Peru*, and before they had any knowledge of our faith, and is, That many years before there were *Ingas*, who were the kings of those parts, the country being very populous, there was a great deluge: (thus far 'tis well.) But then they add, That in the hollow rocks of the highest mountains, there remained some alive, who returned and peopled the earth afresh; and the same tradition is received by the *Indians* of *Quito* in *Collao*. If this were so, the *Indians* of *Chile* might lay claim to the new peopling of *America*; for if any, their mountains were most capable of resisting the deluge, they being the highest that are yet discovered. There are other *indian* mountaineers, who are less mistaken; for they affirm, That none could be saved in the mountains, because they were all covered with water; but that six were saved in a float they made. If they had said eight, they would have hit upon the number which the apostle St. *Peter* says escaped with *Noah* in the ark which he built.

Antonio de Herrera, in the *Third Tome* of the *General History* of the *Indias*, excuses these errors of the *Indians*, saying, 'Tis probable there was some particular deluge in those parts, to which they might allude, because all the nations of that world are agreed in this tradition. The true and natural excuse is, that these poor wretches have not had the good fortune to see the chapter of *Exodus*, where they would have been undeceived; for there 'tis said, That out of the ark of *Noah* there was not left any living thing upon the earth, and that the water was fifteen cubits over the tops of the high-

est mountains. The other *Indians*, who talk of the six men saved on the float, may have had some tradition from their forefathers, who were nearer the time of *Noah*, about the ark; and as they are a people who have no books, because they cannot read, whatsoever they might learn from their ancestors, and retain in their memories, might by degrees be lost, or diminished; and so the descendants came to have the tale of the float and the six persons, not examining how it could possibly be, that upon so slight a contrivance, which can hardly last three or four days in the water, those people should maintain themselves for so long as the deluge lasted. As for the manner and time, how and when the descendants of *Noah* passed to people this new world, or how their generations have been extended so far, 'tis a most difficult thing to make out; for the *Indians* being without written records, as other nations have, there is no diving by their memories into their antiquities, which even when they are committed to writing, use to produce variety of opinions about the origin and beginning of things. Besides, there was in *Europe*, even among the most learned, so great an ignorance of all that regarded *America*, that it was judged scarce inhabitable, if it was at all; and so they could give us no light of a thing they had no notion of, or which they thought impossible; but after the discovery of this new world, people began to reason, and every one made his guesses or reasonings as well as he could. Some have said, with reference to what is hinted by *Plato*, in his *Timæus*, (as is related by our father *Acosta*, in his first book of the *New World*, in the twenty-second chapter,) that people passed from *Europe* and *Africa*, to certain islands; and so from one to another, till they came to the *terra firma* of *America*.

The same author advances something *Acosta*: more probable, in his nineteenth chapter; where

where he says, That supposing we all came from the first man *Adam*, and that the propagation of the species of mankind, after the deluge, was made by those only who were saved out of the ark of *Noah*, 'tis not improbable, that the first inhabitants of *America* came to those parts, not with design, or by their own industry, because of the little use of navigation that was in those days, and particularly through so great a sea; but that they were cast by some storm on those coasts, as it happened since in its first discovery, as we shall see hereafter in its proper place. He brings, to prove this, the example of several ships, which, contrary to their course, have been driven to very remote shores. This is every day's experience, and will not surprize those who know any thing of the strength of the winds and currents in those seas; and that which the same father *Acosta* alledges of himself, That he had such a passage, that in fourteen days he came within sight of the first islands of the gulph of *Mexico*, going from *Spain*.

This, though probable, has yet a strong objection against it, which is about the wild beasts, such as tygers, lions, wolves, and others of that nature, which could not be carried in ships, because they were of no use to mankind, but rather mischievous: and though some may answer with *St. Augustine*, in his sixteenth book *De Civitate Dei*, Chap. 7. when he solves the difficulty how these animals came into islands, and says, That they might either swim thither, or be carried by hunters, or that they might be created a-new by God Almighty, as they were in the beginning of the world; which is the best solution, if it were as probable as it is easy to say. But, first, there is against it the opinions of philosophers, who will not allow any great animals to be propagated any other way than by generation. And, besides, if God, as without doubt he might, had created them a-new, what necessity was there for him to command *Noah* to take so many pairs of all living creatures, all male and female? which care seems superfluous, if God resolved to make a second creation of all those species after the deluge. 'Tis more probable, these creatures might arrive at the islands swimming, and the birds flying, particularly to the nearest islands; but this does not prove, that they could arrive to those remote parts of *America*, there being such a vast ocean, that 'tis not possible that either beasts or birds should have so much strength as to swim or fly over it; for this reason he concludes in the end of the one and twentieth chapter, that the men, as well as animals, passed either by land or water to *America*, near some part where it joins to the other parts

of the world, either by the *Tierra de Bacalaos*, or the *Streight of Magellan*, that is not separated but by ordinary little separations of water and sea, which might be easily pass'd in small vessels, such as were in use in those ancient times.

This is the author's opinion; which, as to the *Tierra de Bacalaos*, carries with it only the probability of an ingenious conjecture; because as yet that part of the world has not been discovered; but if in time it proves like the conjecture about the *Streights of Magellan*, 'tis all without any grounds; for, as we have already related, 'tis now made plain, that *America* on that side is entirely divided from the other parts of the world by a vast sea. 'Tis true, that to the east 'tis not known yet how far that land runs, which is over-against the *Tierra del Fuego*, and is on the east side of the *Streight of St. Vincent*, otherwise called the *Streight of Le Maire*; for some think that it may run as far as the *Cape of Good Hope*, and so be so near that part of *Africa*, that men might pass in small vessels from the one to the other. 'Tis likewise uncertain, that the continent of *America* ever was nearer than it now is to any other continent, or that the sea has since broke away part of either, to make the separation wider, as we have observed it did in the island of *Santa Maria*, which is supposed to have formerly been all of one continued piece with the firm land of *Arauco*; but these are all conjectures, and he alone knows the truth who created these men, and other animals of *America*, and by whose providence they passed to those parts, for the great ends of his hidden secrets; to whom, with all veneration for his councils, we must submit the enquiry, why he has been pleased that that part of the world should remain undiscovered for so many ages, without any communication with those parts where his divine light has appeared sooner. These are considerations for the good to make use of with thanks, for having been admitted to it; and confusion of the wicked, who at noon day are as much in the dark, as if it had never dawned.

Peter Bereius, in his geography, as *John Bereius* and *Theodore de Brye* do relate, collects the antiquity of those nations of *America*, from their most ancient kings and lords, and from the ruins of ancient edifices, and other memorable things; for this argues the largeness of time, in which all this was done. Amongst other things, he mentions the report of one of their gardens belonging to some king, (which must be of *Peru*, who were always the richest,) in which all the herbs, and plants, and shrubs, with their trunks, leaves, and flowers of the natural proportion, were of massy gold; and in the

Aug. de Civ.
vit. Dei.

OVALLE.
1646.

OVALLE. 1646. the houses of recreation, there were all sorts of animals made of precious stones, and some of feathers of various colours. They say besides, that the *Ingas*, who were the emperors of *Peru*, were the richest princes in the world; and that they had so much gold, that not only the plate they eat in were of that metal, but all their household stuff and furniture were of the same, to their tables, benches, cupboards, nay, to the statues themselves; a great deal of which fell to the *Spaniards* share when they conquered those parts; but the best part was hid and concealed by the *Indians*, which to this day they keep undiscovered, being in that way of secret intractable and extream close. Neither is it any wonder that those princes should use so much gold, since they were masters of more of that metal than any others; being so beloved by their subjects, that whatever they had that was precious, they presented it to them; and they were so inclined to hoard it, that whoever succeeded in the monarchy, made it a point of state not to touch, but rather to increase the treasure of his father; of which a great proof was the vast sum which *Atahualpa* offered for his ransom, and paid to the *Spaniards* for it, as we shall see hereafter.

Amongst other precious pieces of gold work, authors make particular mention, and admire with reason, that chain which the king *Guaynacapa*, the eleventh king of *Peru*, caused to be made at the birth of his son *Guascar*, who was to inherit his crown; for each link of it was as big as the wrist of a man, (as is reported by *Garcilasso de la Vega*, who had it from an uncle of his, an *Inga* also, who told him, when he asked the bigness, as big as this, (shewing his wrist,) and as long as twice the length of the great place of *Cusco*, which in all might

be above seven hundred foot long. And the contador, *Augustin de Varate*, in his first book, *Chap. 14.* treating of the incredible riches of that *Inga*, says these words: [*Guaynacapa, at the birth of his son, caused a great cable of gold to be made (as is attested by several Indians yet alive) of so much weight, that two hundred Indians could but just lift it up from the ground; for memory of which they gave the name of Guascar Inga to the new born prince; for Guasca signifies a cable; and the surname of Inga was added, as that of Augustus to the Roman emperors.*] Thus far this author: but this name, or word *Guasca*, not being so decent in its signification for a prince, they added the *r* to it, and nevertheless eterniz'd the memory of that rich chain.

The chiefest motive the king had to order this chain to be made, was, that the dances which were to be made at his birth, might be more solemn, and worthy of his royal person; because the manner of dancing of the *Indians*, is to take one another by the hands, and make a circle; and so moving two steps forward, and one backward, draw closer and closer to the king, to make their obeisances; and the king caused this chain to be made, for them to take hold of, instead of taking hold of one another.

A great proof likewise of this antiquity of the empire of *Peru*, is those two highways mentioned by *Herrera*; for being of that vast length, and work'd with all those conveniencies for travellers, they could not be made but by length of time, and with a long continued labour. This is what I find of the antiquity of the first inhabitants of *America*, in which we may comprehend the *Indians* of *Chile*.

CHAP. II.

Of the great Courage and Boldness of the Indians of Chile.

THE *Indians* of *Chile* are famed by all who have writ of them, for the boldest and most valiant warriors of all the vast extent of the new world: it were to be wished by us, that this had not been confirmed by woful experience, for then the kingdom of *Chile* would have been one of the most flourishing kingdoms of the *Indies*, without the continual wars which it has maintained for about an hundred years, without ever ceasing, or laying down its arms. This is the more considerable, if we reflect, that the *Spaniards* having subjected, in so little a time, those vast empires of *Mexico* and *Peru*, have nevertheless not been able, in so great a time, to conquer the *Indians* of *Chile*, sons of the great *Cordillera*, from

whose rocks they seem to borrow their untameable strength and fierceness. Except we should say with fryer *Gregory* of *Leon*, That this bravery comes from the fertility of the earth, which, as he says, and is true, does not need any thing from abroad. To which he adds, the birth of these people, who all their life tread upon so much gold, and drink the water which runs over these rich minerals, by which they participate of its good and generous qualities, as it is observed of those who live at *Potosi*, near that vast mountain of silver, who are so stout and haughty, as has appeared in the many revolutions that have happened there. Let this be as it will all authors agree, that they are the top nation of *America*, though

though hitherto no one has treated purposely of this matter. There are now two histories in the press, which will make out, by particulars, all that has been said of this nation. Don *Alonso de Ercilla* says enough, in his famous poem, call'd the *Araucana*; but because it is in verse, it seems to lessen something the real truth; and yet abstracting from the hyperboles and enlargings of poetry, all the historical part is very conformable to truth, he being a gentleman of great quality, and an eye-witness of what he affirms; for what he writ, was not by hearsay, but upon the very spot where the things happened; so that he might have had as many contradictors as he had witnesses, who were present as well as he at what pass'd.

He dedicated his book to the most catholic king, his lord and master; and presenting it to him with his own hand, when he came from *Chile* to *Spain*, 'tis to be presum'd he would not have dared to fail in the exactness of truth, for fear of receiving a chastisement, instead of a reward, which he obtain'd for it. Let any read his prologue, in which, in a very good stile, and in prose, he gives a noble account of the valour of the *Indians*, and concludes his preface with these words: [*I have said all this, as a proof and clear demonstration of the valour of these nations, worthy of all the encomiums I can give them in my verses; and besides, there are now in Spain several persons who were present at many of the actions which I here describe, and refer to them the defence of my work on that side.*] Thus far this author, worthy of immortal praise for his incomparable book, which, though published above fifty years ago, and printed in *Spain* and *Flanders*, is yet continually reprinted; which shews the value the curious and the learned have for it. The *Araucanos* are indeed the chief subject of it; and yet what is said of them may be extended to all the *Indians* of *Chile*, as we shall see in its proper place, when we shall treat of the wars they had with the *Spaniards*.

But before ever the *Spaniards* set their feet on their ground, they had given sufficient proof of their bravery, which was invincible, to the *Ingas*, emperors of *Peru*, since with all their power they could never conquer them, though they endeavour'd it, as being extremely inclin'd to enlarge their dominions; and they desir'd it the more, for the fame of *Chile*, to which they sent a powerful army, and which made some progress at first, subjecting some nations to extraordinary tributes. But as they pursued their point, and came to the valley of *Maule*, they met with the *Promocaes*, to whose succour the *Chilenos*, who inhabited more within the country, were come, and

VOL. III.

forc'd the army of the *Ingas* to retire in haste. *Garcilasso de la Vega* relating this more particularly, says, OVALLE.
1646.

That the *Inga yn Pangué*, the tenth king of *Peru*, came to the confines of his own kingdom, to a place call'd *Atacama*, to be nearer at hand to attend the conquest of *Chile*; and from thence first sent his scouts through the fourscore leagues of uncultivated country, which was between his kingdom and *Chile*, with orders to dispatch a man, every two leagues, with an account of what they discover'd; which they did, one messenger following another, and leaving in the way certain marks, whereby they that came last might guide themselves. He first sent ten thousand men, under the command of general *Sinchiruca*, and two other colonels of his own kindred, not being willing to commit to any others care so great an enterprize. They came within sight of the valley of *Copiapo*, which is the first inhabited valley of *Chile*; with the inhabitants of which, the *Peruvians* began to skirmish, because they had not admitted the embassy which they sent them as from the *Inga*, to own him for their lord; and withal, having given notice of the resistance they found to the *Inga*, he sent them ten thousand men more, with a new summons, assuring them, That his design was not to take their country from them, but only that they should own him as son of the sun, and lord of all that was warm'd and enlighten'd by him. Those of *Copiapo* seeing this new relief to their enemies, and knowing that it would not be the last, because the *Inga yn Pangué* was preparing another succour, and being convinced that this acknowledgment would cost them less than the blood that must be spilt in a long resistance, they agreed to own the *Inga* as he desir'd.

This was the first entrance of the *Peruvians* as far as *Maule*, which is one of the rivers of *Chile*, as has been said already. By this time, the army of the *Peruvians* was fifty thousand men, and desiring to prosecute their conquest, they sent their ordinary embassy to the nation of the *Promocaes*, who having already been inform'd of their invading their neighbours, were in arms to defend their country. The ambassadors of the *Inga* deliver'd their accustomed message, protesting, that their lord desir'd nothing more, than to be acknowledg'd as son of the sun, and honour'd accordingly by their submission. The *Promocaes*, who were resolv'd to defend their liberties, made answer, *That the conquerors should be the lords and masters*; and so uniting all their forces, came on the fourth day, and presented battle to the *Peruvians*. The *Inga's* generals, surpriz'd at such a cou-

R

ragious

OVALLE 1646. ragious resolution, sent them new summons, desiring their friendship and peace, calling the sun and moon to witness, that they came not to spoil them of their lands or goods, but only to oblige them to own the sun for their God, and the *Inga* for his son and their lord. To which they receiv'd answer, That they came not to spend time in talking, or vain discourses, but to fight manfully till they should conquer or die; adding, that they might prepare themselves for battle the next day, as it happen'd; and the *Promocaes* overcame that powerful army of the *Inga's*, so that they had no mind to try their fortune any more, but made their retreat, leaving the *Promocaes* in peace, and full possession of their lands, which they had so bravely defended. *Antonio de Herrera*, in his third tome, and fifth decade, treating of the reason why those of *Chile* refus'd to submit to those monarchs the *Ingas*, says, That it was because of the great reverence with which they made their subjects treat them, as if they were Gods, and approach them as if they were of another species; which the *Chilenians* could not bear, their mind being too lofty and generous to submit to such a tyranny, which they constantly oppos'd; inso-much, that though the *Ingas* had conquer'd the best part of that continent, yet the *Chilenians* never did yield to their power. Perhaps the nearest provinces to *Peru*, such as those of *Guasco*, *Coquimbo*, and *Copiapo*, did in some measure acknowledge their power, since they paid a tribute in gold; and for that reason, these provinces alone in all the kingdom of *Chile*, do speak the common language of *Peru*, which is a very strong proof of what I here say.

For the same reason that they resisted the *Ingas*, they did not care to have any king of their own nation, the love of their liberty prevailing against all the reasons of state, which might move them to have one monarch; neither did they fall into any popular form of government, or commonwealth; for their warlike temper did not afford patience enough for the slegmatick debates, necessary for the union of so ma-

ny minds. Thus every family chose one among them to govern them. From this arose the *Caciques*, who are the sovereigns among them, and by degrees had that power hereditary, and their children after them enjoy it, with all its rights.

But though every one governs independently his own district or jurisdiction, yet when the occasion offers, that the safety of all is concern'd, there is an assembly of the *Caciques*, and some of the elders of the *state-people*, who are men of experience, and are summon'd after their way by particular messengers. In these councils they resolve what they think most convenient; which, if it be a case of war, either defensive or offensive, they chuse the general, not one of the most noble of the *Caciques*, or the most powerful, but he who has the fame of most valiant, and has best behav'd himself on the like occasion against their enemies; and when he is justly chosen, all the other *Caciques* obey him punctually. 'Tis after this manner that they have preserv'd themselves so many years against all the strength that has been brought against them. To make these assemblies, they chose out some very pleasant place, field, or meadow; and thither they bring great store of provision, and strong drink, call'd *Chicha*, which is instead of wine. Being all assembled, and well warm'd with this liquor, and excited in their martial temper, there rises up some one of the most antient, to whose lot it falls, to propose the business of that meeting; who with great eloquence (for in that they are very famous) opens the matter, and brings all the reasons and motives of persuasion that he can. All are oblig'd to yield to the majority of opinion; and when the result is made, 'tis publish'd with the sound of drums and trumpets, and a mighty noise; but yet allowing every one the term of three days, to reflect and consider on what has been resolv'd; after which, if they find no inconveniency, the execution is infallible, and they think of the means of bringing the business about by the most proper methods.

C H A P. III:

The same Subject is pursued, and the Nobility of the Indians of Chile examin'd.

Antonio de Herrera, in the place already cited in the last chapter, says, That there are some of the *Indians* reputed above the rest as gentlemen; and then he adds these words, [Of this sort have been, and are still the *Indians* of Chile.] In which he says well; for if valour and the glory of arms makes gentlemen, as may be seen in

Andreas Tiraquello, in his book *de Nobilitate & jure Primogenitorum*; and if many noble families do to this day derive themselves from some great captain or famous soldier, the *Chilean Indians* having so often signalized their valour in fights, they may very justly be distinguish'd from all the other *Indians*, and reputed more noble.

In

In short, they are the untam'd *Cantabri* of *America*, who, like those of *Europe*, defended themselves, when all the rest of it was enslaved; and repulsed the conquering monarchs of *Peru* to the extrem confines of their provinces.

And there is one circumstance more particular than under the *Cantabrians*, because they had the advantage of their mountains, and the barrenness of their country, not so inviting to a conqueror; but in *Chile* it was otherwise: the richness of its mines, and its soil full of delicious valleys, and a clear and rich territory, having been always well known, the only valour and bravery of its inhabitants was then the defence of the country: these were the fortresses and walls of it; for without a bit of fortification of any sort, or so much as one fire-arm, they oblig'd their powerful enemy to a shameful retreat. Indeed, this is a thing worthy of great admiration; yet not so much to those who know how these *Indians* value themselves upon being good soldiers, using themselves to arms, even from their childhood; of which it will not be amiss to speak a little.

The education of the youth of Chile.

When a child is strong enough, they make it run up the rocky side of a hill, giving him that does it best, some prize or reward: this makes them very nimble and light; and I have seen them, in their feasts and entertainments, run two and two for wagers with wonderful swiftness; and those who shew little disposition to this exercise, are applied to follow day-labour, but the others they reserve for war, not suffering them to take to any other employments, but mind their arms and their horses, that they may be perfect in all their exercises. To these they assign their post upon occasion, according as each has behav'd himself in those which he has been in before; and they have in this no consideration of gentility, intercession of others, or other motives, but that alone of a good performance, and the many proofs given by them of their courage and conduct in war.

Their arms in war.

The arms they use, are pikes, halberts, launces, hatchets, maces of arms, bars, darts, arrows, and clubs; as also strong nooses to throw upon a horseman, and slings. Their horse fight with lance and buckler, which they have learn'd from the *Spaniards*, and from them they have had their horses; for before their time, they had neither horse nor iron, but they have a hard wood, which grows yet harder by being turn'd in the fire, and is almost as useful as steel. They have hard and strong corselets, back and breast, and thighs, arms, bracelets, gauntlets, helmets, morions; all these of a hardened leather, so prepared when raw, that it becomes by drying as im-

Their armour.

penetrable as any steel; and they are some-^{OVALLE. 1646.} thing better, because more manageable, and do embarrass the body less, as being lighter; and so the man is more at his ease, and better dispos'd in fight. Among them the pikeman may not be an archer; neither can any that uses the mace of arms, use other arms; so every one bestirs himself with the arms he is us'd to.

In forming their battalions, every file is ^{Their order of battle.} of above an hundred men, and between every pikeman an archer, who are defended by the pikemen, who close their shoulders together; and if their first battalion is broken, the second relieves them with so much readiness, that there seems not that any have fail'd; and so by the third and fourth following each other, like waves of the sea, without any interruption; and no man forsakes his rank, but by death. They always endeavour to have some bog or lake not far off for a retreat; for there they are more in safety than in the strongest castle. Their volunteers go before the battalion, trailing their pikes with so much state, and are themselves so haughty, that, like *Goliath*, they challenge their enemy to meet them body to body; and they do the same to the *Spaniards*, giving themselves great airs of pride. They march to the sound ^{Their war-like ornaments.} of their drums and trumpets, having their arms garnish'd with all variety of beautiful colours, and themselves adorn'd with great plumes of rich feathers, so that they appear very handsome and sightly.

When they make any forts for their de-^{Their forts.} fence, it is of great trees interwoven with each other, and leaving in the middle a place of arms; and formerly within this fort they us'd to make another of thick planks. Behind this, they make a great ditch, cover'd over with plants and flowers, but underneath them sharp stakes to lame the enemy's horses; some they make deeper, that the horses may remain there stak'd thorough.

Many of them are subject to great superstitions and auguries, observing the omens, both before and at the time of their undertaking; but many of them laugh at those observations, saying, there are no better omens than good blows, and stout laying about them, without fear of either steel, fire, or any sort of death; and it is certainly so, that their first encounter is terrible, and as if they fear'd no one thing in the world. When they are drawn up, and ready to engage, there is silence made, and the general raising his voice, begins an harangue, so full of spirit, fill'd with such warm incitations, and such a lively action, that the cowardliest among them become like lions and tygers against their enemies. He lays before them the glory of victory, and

OVALLE. and the shame of being overcome, and made
1646. captives and slaves to their adversaries.

Their military exhortations. "Take notice, says he, that there is now no medium between those two extremes: are not you the sons and grandchildren of those brave men, who have fought so many battles, and ventur'd all to defend that country and liberty, for which we now fight? Shall we own that they exceed us in bravery, or that the enemies we encounter are superior to those whom they overcame? Had they less motives than we have? or do we hope for less glory? We must all die; and in the equality of that common fate, the only difference is dying nobly for our dear country, and the liberty of our wives and children; therefore rouse up that courage which you have inherited from your ancestors, who never could endure the thoughts of that infamous yoke of slavery upon their necks. Courage then brave men, as brave as any the sun sees; courage, for in that lies victory."

With these, and other such words, and calling to mind some of their victories, they grow so warm, that raising a cry of war, they drive away all fear, and express great desire of engaging their enemies; which they do with so much fury and resolution, that a battalion that stands their first shock is a very firm one. But we will treat further of this when we shall speak of the battles they have had with the *Spaniards*, whose valour has set theirs in its lustre, obliging them to give such proofs as are worthy to be recorded in history. Let us pursue now the account of their natural qualities, independently from the resistance which they have made to his catholick majesty's arms.

Their natural temper. The warlike spirit of this nation proceeds from their natural temper, which is choleric and impatient, proud, arrogant, and fierce, very cruel in their revenge, cutting their enemies (when in their power) inhumanly to pieces, and wallowing in their blood. We shall relate a case hereafter, in which something of this will be seen. They are strong and robust of body, well proportion'd, large shoulders, high chests, well set in their members, nimble, active, vigorous, and nervous, courageous and undertaking, enduring hunger, thirst, heat, cold; despising all conveniencies of life, even their own small ones, having little value for their very lives, when 'tis necessary to hazard them, either for glory or liberty; constant in their resolutions, and persisting in a thing once begun with incredible steadiness.

Good horsemen. They are excellent horsemen, and upon a single saddle-cloth, or without one, they are as firm as others in war-saddles: they'll ride down the side of a hill, or a precipice, as if they were goats, with their bodies as

freight and as firm on horseback, as if they were nail'd to the horse: they have no trouble with the baggage they want, for they carry but little with them; not but that when they march they have their little pack of flower of maiz, a little salt, some *Pimientos*, or *Guinea Pepper*, and dried flesh; and this is enough to maintain them a good while. They need no other kitchen utensils than a gourd or *calabash*, with which, when they come to a river or spring, they open their flower-bag, and wet a little with the water, and that serves them for drink; and for meat, when they put more of it with a little salt and pepper, this they call *Rubul*; and sometimes they eat their meal dry, with slices of dried flesh.

The great numbers of people which that country has maintain'd, may be collected from the people that the *Spaniards* found there at their first coming, which was about 200000, more or less, according to the greatness of the districts or territories, and their habitations, which never were in form of a city or town; for the *Indians* cannot endure any formal constraint, but love to live free in the fields; and every *Cacique*, or lord, govern'd his own vassals, who placed themselves according to their conveniencies, some in one valley, and some in another; some at the foot of mountains, others on the side of rivers; some by the sea-side, or on the top of mountains; but all under no other form of government, than the will of their lord, the *Cacique*, to whom they yielded a ready and prompt obedience with joy. Their houses are generally of wood, without any stories, not very large, nor all of a piece, but each room fram'd by itself, so that when they have a mind to remove and chuse another situation, they carry away the house by pieces, or rooms, which ten or twenty men can easily carry. When they take it up, they clear the ground about it, and then at one cry, lifting all together, they get it up, and carry it cheerfully away, every one taking hold by its pillars; and when they are weary they rest awhile, and so on again. Their doors are of the same material, and they have neither hinges, locks nor keys, nor any thing under a lock or key, their security consisting in each other's fidelity, which they observe sacredly towards one another.

Their furniture is very mean, they being a people that despise all conveniencies and superfluities; inasmuch, that that which is their natural way of living, would be high penance with any *European* nations: For first, as to their beds, they have neither quilts, nor sheets, nor pillows, much less do they need curtains, pavilions, or alcoves. The hard ground is their couch, upon which they lay some poor skins;

skins; and for boulder, they lay a stone, or a piece of wood, and double their cloaks to lay on it; and that is their highest contrivance of ease: they have one or two very coarse coverlets, which they weave of a sort of thread as thick as one's little finger. People that use so little about their persons, may easily be presumed to have no hangings, nor other ornament to their walls; they have no utensil of gold or silver, though they have so much in their country; their plate is four or five dishes, and some spoons of wood, or a shell from the sea side; a calabash or gourd to drink in; a leaf of a tree, or of maiz, for a saltcellar. This is all the apparatus of their table, which is the ground, or at best a little bench, without any cloth or napkins, but only a little broom, upon which they wipe their hands.

*Their food
and diet.*

Their meats are the most simple, and easily dressed, without any incitements to gluttony, as in other nations; but yet they are tasteful enough, and such as many of our Europeans like very well. They eat little flesh; and before the Spaniards came among them, they had neither sheep, goats, nor cows, no, nor hens: they use these only at their great feasts. Their ordinary diet is of maiz, variety of fruits and herbs, and most commonly gourds, or a sort of beans, which we call frizoles. They did eat fish; and the game they hunted, particularly a sort of small rabbits, which they call *Degus*; and since the coming in of the Spaniards, they eat beef and mutton, of which there is great abundance.

Instead of wheat bread, which they had not before the Spaniards brought it, they eat maiz boiled in water, just as rice in the

Maiz.

East Indias. This maiz is, and always has been the general nourishment of the Indians of America; and is not only their meat, but their drink, which they make of the same maiz, toasted and steeped in water, and then boiled, and set by; and that is their *Chicha*, or wine, which they make also of the fruit of other trees.

OVALLE.
1646.

Their way of making flower is very different from ours: they first toast their maiz in great platters of earth; these they set upon the fire full of sand, which when it is very hot, they take off; and putting the grains of maiz to it, stir them about very fast with a kind of broom: it is soon toasted. When done, they take it out, and put in more, till they have done enough to make flower. This they grind between two stones thus; They have a stone fixed in the ground, of about the shape and bigness of a sheet of paper, and so hollowed, as another stone of an oval figure may play upon it: this the indian woman takes with both hands, and being upon her knees, makes it play upon the other, putting, from time to time, with her left hand, the maiz between the two stones, so as to supply what falls away, and that the mill do not stand still. The flower falls forward into a sort of box, as it does in our mills, and almost as fast, comparing the strength of a woman to that of a stream of water. She can do enough at once for the maintenance of her family; and make a provision too for a journey or a voyage of her husband or son to the wars. This is the proper business of the women; and it would be a shame for a man to employ himself in it, or in any other household business.

Their bread.

*The women
make it.*

CHAP. IV.

Of the same Subject.

WHEN the Indians are sick, they change little of their ordinary way of living, and they never have a better bed. Their way of letting blood is safer than ours; for it is not with a lancet, which may either fail to draw blood, or go too deep, and lame the arm, if the surgeon be not very skilful; but with a sharp flint, fixed at the end of a little piece of wood, so fast, that there is just enough left out to cut the vein, and no more: this they apply to the vein after they have made a bandage, as we do, and striking a little stroke upon it, the blood never fails to come, in greater abundance than our bleedings are. This is all they need a surgeon or barber for, they themselves having no beards to shave, and the little hair they have, every one pulls out; and they take it for an affront to look hairy.

Indian phlebotomy.

They have pinchers, which they make of cockle-shells, and always have them about them, using them from time to time in conversation; they thinking it as honourable to be without that, which other people nourish, comb, and take care of; which is a good conviction of the variety of opinions of mankind, about what is, and is not honourable. As for their hair, they let it grow just below their ears, and no lower, and so need no barber to cut it, but do every one help the other to keep the ends of it even.

Their manner of cloathing themselves, (though of various, and very beautiful colours, which they give to the wooll that they weave their cloaths of,) is very plain and simple: they have no lining to any of their cloaths, neither do they wear one under

*Their manner of
cloathing.*

1646. *OVALLE.* der another: their drawers come down to their knees, open and loofe, and it is upon their naked body; for they use no shirts: they have a fort of waistcoat, which they call *Macun*, and it is made of about a yard and a half of some woollen stuff, which they leave open, so as to put it over their heads, and then they gird it with a girdle: they have also a kind of cloak or mantle, which they call *Chomi*, which they put on when they go abroad: they have their arms and legs naked, and on their feet they have a sort of shoe, which they call *Ojota*, and is like the rope shoes the *Spaniards* wear: they wear nothing on their heads, but a kind of circle of wooll, of various colours, with its fringes hanging down like a cap; which they stir or pull off in shew of respect, as we do our hats.

Their finery. In their feasts, balls, and rejoicings, though they do not change the form of their cloaths, yet they have a richer sort, of finer wooll, and richer colours: they put about their necks some chains of shells, which they gather by the sea-side; these they call *Nancas*: others put snail-shells, strung upon a string, about their necks; and those of the streights of *Magellan* have pearls very well wrought, and of great artifice, as is affirmed by the authors already cited; and on their heads they put a kind of garland, not of flowers, but of wooll, dy'd of several beautiful colours, to which they hang fine little birds, which they esteem, and on each side they have a plume of high feathers, either white, red, or blue, and about half a yard high.

Their dancing. Their way of dancing is with little jumps, and a step or two, not rising much from ground, and without any capers, such as the *Spaniards* use: they dance all together in a ring, round a may-pole or standard, which one of them holds in the middle as an ensign; and near it are all the bottles of their wine, of which they take now and then a sup while they dance, drinking to one another; for it is a custom among them never to drink alone any thing that is given them: he that begins takes a sup, and then he that he drinks to pledges him, and gives the cup to another, and so to a fourth, till it be empty; and yet one has not more than the other; for what this man does for that, that man does for this; and so at last they come to be so equally shared, that at the end of the entertainment, they are all alike drunk, and laid down; for they drink as long as they can stand. But this is not easily brought to pass; for besides what they drink in the day-time, they will often pass all night at it, without leaving off, singing and dancing to their drums and flutes. The women, as more bashful, do not enter into these dances, except some

one or two, when the wine has got into their heads, and then too they do not enter into the ring with the men, but dance by themselves. Few of them get drunk, so as to lose their judgment; so they are upon their guard more, to mind that the men do not quarrel, and hurt one another in their drink. Their flutes, which they play upon in these dances, are made of the bones of the *Spaniards*, and other enemies, whom they have overcome in war. This they do by way of triumph and glory for their victory: they make them likewise of bones of other animals; but the *Indians* of war dance only to these of their enemies.

Their way of singing is, all together raising their voices upon the same note, without any difference of parts or measure; and at the end of every song they play on their flutes, and a sort of trumpets, just as we do on our guittars in the *Paffacalles*. This they repeat so often, and so loud, that one may hear them at a great distance; for in these feasts, they are very numerous. Those who are not engaged in dancing, sit together in several companies, talking together upon past occurrences, and still warming themselves with their wine; and then they begin to recollect the injuries they have received from one another, and so refreshing the memory of old contests and enmities not revenged; and this makes them break out into new animosities, and sometimes kill one another upon little provocation.

The women as well as the men have their arms naked, but no other part about them; for though they go barefoot, yet their cloaths, which are very long, cover them from head to foot, though in some places they wear them shorter: this is a plain sort of mantle, close to their bodies, without any linnen underneath; this they let fall to their feet, and having fastened it on their shoulders, gather it in plaits and swath themselves from their waste to the breasts with some fine coloured-woollen scarf, of about four fingers broad, and so long, that it takes so many turns about their waste, as to keep their bodies as straight as any: this is all their dress within doors.

The *indian* women of the better sort, that live in towns among the *Spaniards*, have learned the use of smocks and waistcoats under their mantles, but of no other thing; and one cannot affront an *indian* woman more, than to offer to put her on head-cloaths, or necklaces, or sleeves, or gloves, or any of those ornaments which the *Spanish* women use; and much more if they oblige them to put any paint upon their faces; nothing of this kind could ever prevail upon them, though born and bred among the *Spanish* women; and to talk to them

The women's behaviour at their feasts.

Their care of their husbands.

Their wind instruments made of their enemies bones.

The women's dress.

The women hate head-dresses.

and paint.

them of it, even to those among them who love to be fine, would be like giving them a cut over the face, so great a horror they have for any thing that is so very contrary to their antient customs. They wear nothing on their heads but their hair plaited behind their shoulders, and divided handsomely upon their forehead over their eyebrows, and have locks which cover part of their cheeks; so their face is handsomely and simply adorned, without any artifice. When they go abroad, they put upon their shoulders another half mantle, square, and fastened before with a bodkin, or crochet, which answers the two others on the shoulders; and thus they go abroad with their eyes fixed upon the ground; for they are naturally very modest honest women.

Few artificers; all soldiers.

Their way of keeping accounts.

This manner of cloathing themselves, with so much simplicity and plainness, as well in the women as the men, with so little pride and vanity in their houses, does not much encourage artificers, who have little to do; and by that means there are the more men of war, which is the thing in which these men place their honour and felicity, as other nations do in the sumptuousness of palaces and furniture, or in other riches and eminencies, either of arts or learning: of all which these *Indians* never had any notion; and yet they learn them easily, when they are taught them, and to a great perfection. They can neither read nor write among themselves; but as to their way of remembering and keeping account, they have their *Quipoes*, which is a sort of strings of different bigness, in which they make knots of several colours, by which they remember, and can give an account of the things committed to their charge. With these they will give an account of a great flock, and tell which have died of sickness or other accidents, and which have been spent in the family, and for the shepherds; and they will tell every particular that happened in such and such occasions, and of what they did and said. When they go to confess, these *Quipoes* serve them to remember their sins, and tell them with distinction and clearness: they have besides excellent memories of their own, and do remember things of very antient date, just as if they had happened but a little while before; and when they begin to talk them over, (which happens generally when they drink, and begin to be warmed with wine,) 'tis wonderful how they will repeat things past, with all their circumstances, and particularly affronts and injuries that have been done them, or their ancestors, refreshing the memory of things that seemed to be quite forgotten. For proof of the care they take to keep the memory of remarkable passages, I must relate

here what I learned from father *Diego Torres Ovalle*. *Bollo*, a very extraordinary man, both for holiness of life, and skill in government. 1646.

This great man returning from *Rome* (whither he had been sent as procurator of the province of *Peru*) to found the province of *Quito*, he saw in a place where four ways met an *Indian*, who, to the sound of a drum, was singing a great many things all alone in his own tongue: the father called one in his company, who understood it, and ask'd him what that *Indian* meant by that action; who told the father, that that *Indian* was, as it were, the register of that country, who, to keep up the memory of what had passed in it from the deluge to that time, was bound every holiday to repeat it by the sound of a drum, and singing, as he was then doing. He was moreover obliged to instruct others in the same way, that there might be a succession of men to do the same thing after he was gone; and that which he at this time is singing is, That in such a year there had been there a white man called *Thomas*, who did great wonders, preaching a new law, which in time was lost and forgotten, &c. And thus we may see the manner by which the *Indians* supply the want of books and writings. A singular way of registering events. An addition of the interpreter, or a bye of the jesuit.

The women of *Chile* are so bold and manly in their courage, that when it is necessary, and that there is want of men, they take arms, and behave themselves as if they were men. They play likewise at a very active game called *La Chueca*, wherein the men shew their greatest agility and nimbleness, each side striving to get a ball from the other, and carry it to the mark with crooked bandy sticks. They are about forty or fifty on a side, who place themselves in different posts, so as to be useful one to another, and drive away the ball from the other party; and when it happens that two of different sides are at it together, 'tis a pleasure to see them run, the one to forward it with another stroke, and the other to get before him and hinder him from striking it, that he may drive it back to his own side. This is a sport much to be seen, and generally it has many spectators to see the end of the play, which often lasts a whole evening, and sometimes is forced to be put off to another day, such contention there is to win these prizes they play for.

The strength and boldness of the women comes from the little tenderness they are bred with, for they avoid neither heat nor cold; and in the coldest winters, when birds are killed with cold, they wash their heads in cold water, and never dry their hair, but let it remain wet, and dry itself in the air; and as for their children, they wash them in the rivers, when they are yet very young; and when they are brought to bed,

The hard education of the women.

1646. OVALLE. in a very little time they are about the house, as if it were not they, but some other woman that had lain in.

The Indian mens hardi-ness against wet and cold. If the women behave themselves thus, what may we expect from the men? 'Tis a wonderful thing how little they fear weather, though in the midst of winter; and to see an *Indian*, with that simple habit we have described, his head bare, without hat, or any other covering. I have seen them in this condition endure mighty showers, which wet them all over, and came out at their breeches, and yet laugh and not value that, which to others would have been insupportable.

I remember, upon this occasion, what was said by a *Spanish* gentleman, of a merry humour, to one newly come from *Europe*, who, with great charity, was pitying these poor *Indians* for their sufferings in winter, which in that country is very severe. The gentleman asked the good father what he had to keep his face from the cold? To which he answered, *Nothing*, because every body's face was used to the weather. To which

the gentleman replied, *These Indians are all face*; for from their infancy they have no defence against the cold. Who is it that pities a trout, or other fish, for being in the water, because they are bred in that element? The same may be said of these *Indians*, who are like fishes, and are bred to all that hardship; and so we need not wonder at it. By these means they are so hardened, that a wound which the bravest *Spaniard* would take his bed for, does give them so little trouble, that I have seen them go about without minding it. I have known them have a broken head by accident at play, and all they do is to wash it in cold water, never leaving their employment or business; and with this, and the application of their own herbs, which, indeed, are of great virtue, they are soon well; but the excellency of their own constitution helps not a little to their cure in wounds, as well as all other distempers, out of which they get well with a great deal less time and care than the *Spaniards*.

Bear their wounds better than the Spaniards.

C H A P. V.

Of other Qualities proper to the Natives of Chile.

The people of Chile very patient.

A good story.

'Tis the custom in Spain to dance at processions.

The complexion of the Chile-nians.

FROM this strong constitution, comes the admirable patience of their minds, and the little sense they shew of that which amongst us *Europeans* would be a great mortification. That which happened between an *Indian* and father *Lewis* of *Valdivia* is admirable upon this subject. The *Indian* came to confess to the father; who, to make him enter into a penance for his sins, ordered him to wear a *Cilice*, or hair-cloth upon his skin: it was a very hard one, and such as would have punished one of us severely. The *Indian* put it on, and about a year after, there was a procession of the holy sacrament, at which he danced, and seeing his confessor in the church, he left his dancing, and came to him, saying, *Look here how I have preserved what thou gavest me a year ago*, and shewed it him upon his naked skin. The father was astonished to see, that what he gave him to mortify him, was turned to an ornament; and asking him how long he had worn it, was answered by him, *I have never left it off one minute since thou gavest it me*; and so returned to his dancing, shewing his companions the present the father had made him, as pleased with it, as if it had been a gold or silver brocade; and so far he was from taking it for mortification, or feeling its roughness, that he wore it for a favour given him by his father-confessor.

These *Indians* of *Chile* are the fairest complexioned, and whitest of all *America*; and those of the coldest countries are the whitest,

as we see in *Europe*; but the very antipodes of *Flanders* never come to be so white as the *Flemmings*; and among all the *Chilenians*, I do not remember a red-hair'd one; for they all, both men and women, have black hair, and that very rough, and hard, and thick; insomuch that the mestizos, or mungrel breed of a *Spanish* man and *Indian* woman, are known and distinguished by that from the children of a *Spanish* man and *Spanish* woman; and this will last to the second and third generation before it softens. There is little difference in any thing else, either of shape, feature, or disposition; nor in the manner of speaking, or sound of the voice: and as for the language, not only the mestizos, but the *Indians* bred among the *Spaniards*, are as ready at the phrase and turn of the *Spanish* tongue, as any *Spaniard*. I have made experience of this often in confessing them; for the confessional is so turned, as the father-confessor cannot see the woman that enters to confess. It happen'd to me often to have an *Indian* woman come in after a *Spanish* woman, and I could not find any difference, till she herself, finding I used her with that distinction and civility due to *Spanish* ladies, would humbly tell me she was but an *Indian*.

No red hair.

They speak perfectly.

The constitution of these people is the cause that time does not make so strong an impression on them, as on us; and they bear their years mighty well, turning grey very late, at threescore, or thereabouts; and till then they look like young men. When they

They bear their years very well.

they are over white, or have any baldness, you may guess them at about a hundred :
Live long. they all live long, and particularly the women ; and when by age they lose their judgment, they seldom falter in their memory, which lasts them to their dying day, even to remember all the particulars of their young days from their infancy. Their
Good teeth. teeth and eyes are so good, that they seldom lose either ; and, in short, all the infirmities of old men, which are the forerunners of death, come to them later than to other nations. But yet, if they happen
Cannot endure to leave their own country. to go out of their own country, they lose all their vigour, as we experience daily in our prisoners of war ; who being sold to *Peru*, as soon as they feel the heat of the tropick, they fall sick, and most of them die ; and this is no more than what happens to the *Spaniards*, when they come from their own climate to *Porto Bello*, or *Panama* ; nay, the *Spaniards* born in *Chile*, venture their lives that go to those countries that are between the tropicks.

From this experience the *Indians* have of the hot countries, comes the great reluctance they shew to go out of their own, and the resentment they express against those who carry or send them abroad ; and 'tis not to be imagin'd the strange and rash contrivances they have to make their escapes from *Lima* ; for though they have above five hundred leagues to go to their own home from *Peru*, yet they undertake it, and most commonly compass it, through a vast number of dangers and inconveniences. For first, they are forced to go all along by the sea-side, by which one may guess how much they go about, since they fetch the compass of all the bays and nooks, and double all the capes.

The next inconvenience which they meet with, is want of food ; for they dare not enter any town, or inhabited place ; so they are reduc'd to feed on cockles and other shell-fish on the sea-side, which is no very good nourishment. The third difficulty is the passing of so many, and such swift rivers.

The fourth inconvenience is the want of water to drink ; for 'tis not possible, that in so great a journey, they should not sometimes miss of fresh water to quench their thirst. All these difficulties, and many others, which are obvious to travellers, are overcome by these *Indians* by length of time and patience ; and they get at last to their own country, and are out of slavery, not by the means of gold or silver, but by the bravery of their minds.

The boldness of some Chilenians to avoid slavery. The boldness of some other *Indians* was yet more remarkable : these were carried in a ship to be sold as slaves at *Lima*, by a Portuguese gentleman of the *Habit of Christ*,

who was going about things belonging to war, at the time that I went the same voyage : this navigation is made commonly in sight of the coast, more or less, according as the winds serve ; but still they keep a good way out at sea, for fear of the rocks. These *Indians* resolv'd among themselves to throw themselves into the sea, to avoid this slavery ; and one day, when they found the ship in a proportionable distance to the shoar, so as they durst venture to trust to their swimming, they got loose very dexterously from their fetters, and slid, without being perceiv'd, down by the ship's side into the sea ; and when they miss'd them they were out of sight, and so it was in vain to follow them. Among these prisoners there was an old man, who either
Ovalle. 1646.
An odd story.
because he was not trusted by the others, or because they had not the opportunity of acquainting him with the design, he not being shut up with them, but having the liberty of the ship as an old man, remain'd behind after they were gone. This *Indian* began to think of the thing, and to weigh with himself how his companions had undertaken and perform'd an extraordinary action ; he reflect'd how they had arrived at their own land, and among their friends, who perhaps were enquiring about him, and that every body despis'd him as a coward, and a man of little spirit, since he had not been able to overcome the adverse fortune which the others had conquer'd, but had submitted to it : he represented to himself the welcomes and joys which their friends express'd, and the feasts and entertainments made for their return, and the embraces and caresses which they receiv'd from their relations. All this, I say, made such an impression in his mind, and rais'd such an emulation, that he could not bear the reproaches he made himself, particularly seeing himself without a remedy. At last, after much thought and pensiveness, he came to a resolution, which was, to do something which should be bolder than what his companions had perform'd, and that in the manner of doing it ; for he resolv'd to do it by day, in the sight of all the *Spaniards* ; and for a beginning, he design'd to kill his master, not in the night, and without witnesses, as he might easily have done, but upon the deck, in the sight of all those in the ship, to get himself a greater name of bravery. To this end, he took one day, a great knife in his hand, and fell upon the captain ; and having wounded him in several places, with as much precipitation as he could, leap'd overboard with so much suddenness, that he slipp'd away from those who endeavour'd to seize him. 'Tis to be imagin'd, they were all wonderfully surpris'd at the resoluteness

1646. *OUALLE* of the action: they immediately brought the ship too, and put out the boat in all the haste that could be to follow the *Indian*, who swimming like a fish, was already almost out of fight; but they overtook him, and bid him yield himself a prisoner, since he could not escape; and finding him still endeavour to get away, they struck at him with their launces, but he dexterously avoided all their strokes with great presence of mind, diving and appearing again where they least expected him. Upon this they fir'd upon him, and wounded him in several places; but neither then did he yield, nor would ever had a thought of it, but the loss of blood taking away his strength, had made him unable to get away, so they brought him almost expiring to the ship, having more valued death with the reputation of a brave man, than life with the infamy of a coward, and the loss of reputation among his own people. This fact does not only shew the bravery of the nation, but likewise their great aversion to go out of their own country, and how heavy a yoke they think subjection to be; and we shall see hereafter how much they have done to defend their beloved liberty.

Their marriages. Now let us speak of some other customs these *Indians* have. They solemnize their marriages their own way, and in a very contrary manner to that of the *Europeans*; for as to the portion, the woman does not provide it, but the man; and neither of them enjoy it, but it passes to the propriety and use of the father of the young woman; so that the husband has a charge upon him of maintaining his wife without any help; nay, rather with less ability, for he parts with some of his substance to purchase her; so that in this country 'tis no charge at all to have many daughters, but rather a part of their estate and substance.

Daughters are no burthen, but rather riches to a father.

How they manage polygamy.

They take many wives; and the greatest obstacle they have to be converted to our religion, is this vice of *Polygamy*, which they embrace with great sensuality, though 'tis chargeable, because at the same time 'tis a figure of power and riches. The first wife has some preheminance over the others, and has the ordering of them, yet they all look upon themselves as lawful wives, and their children as legitimate; yet the son of the first inherits the estate and the honour of *Cacique*, and has a power over his other brothers.

Natural obedience to their Cacique.

The subjects obey their lord with great punctuality, love, and respect; and for this reason they have no prisons nor strong places to hold them in; for their natural love and respect they bear their *Cacique*, is a law inviolable in their hearts, and a reward of their obedience, which they shew in all regards that may please him.

When a *Cacique* has a mind to make war, *he need not make provision of money for pay, without which, amongst us, men will not fight, even for their king: he need only give out his orders, and they all come with arms and horses, bearing their own charges during the enterprize; and this is the reason that they can assemble so powerful an army in so little time, they all looking upon the common cause as their own; and as they make the good of their country the motive of their arms, every one thinks himself sufficiently rewarded if they can defend that from their enemies. The sound of the drum and trumpet is only to shew them the necessity of their meeting in arms; at which they immediately leave wife and children, and all that is dear to them, with the hazard of never seeing them more, as it often happens.* *Their wars voluntary, without pay.*

In the distribution of the booty and slaves taken in war, there is no other method, than that every one has what he can get, so that the bravest and most diligent are the best provided, without any obligation of giving any part of it to their captains or general; for in this they are all equal, and valour alone makes the distinction, which they shew in an eminent degree, being very desirous to recover some of our arms, such as guns, swords, launces; for they have no iron of their own. *Very brave. Want iron.* When they return from war, and find what men they have lost, 'tis incredible what lamentations, cries, and tears, proceed from the widows and children of those who are dead; and though this be a common sentiment of humanity, practised amongst all nations who value society and proximity of blood, which are the foundation of friendship, yet the *Indian* women seem to surpass all others; for they do not cry in secret, but set up their notes, so that when any one hears them at a distance, it provokes more to laughter than moves to compassion. When a man dies at home, the manner of *The women's manner of mourning.* their expressing their sorrow is more remarkable; for the women all get about the dead body, and the eldest beginning, the others follow all in the same tone; and thus they continue a great while, so that they never give over as long as they can hold out; and this custom they preserve, even after they are baptiz'd, and live among christians; but not that which they had of opening the dead bodies, to know of what disease they died, and to put meat, and drink, and cloaths in their graves with them, as also jewels and things of value; neither do they cover their graves with pyramids of stones, nor use other ceremonies practised by the gentiles of those parts.

Of the Chilenian Indians, who inhabit the Islands of Chile:

WE divided the kingdom of *Chile* into three parts, and the *Islands* made one: these are very well peopled: those who live in the fertile *Islands*, which are capable of producing corn, and feeding flocks, pass their lives as the *Indians* of *terra firma* do, eating flesh and several fruits, the product of their *Islands*. Those who inhabit the barren or less fertile *Islands*, eat fish of the sea, and shell-fish, as also *Potatoes*; and some, who cannot have any wooll, cloath themselves with the barks of trees. Some go stark-naked, though their climate is mighty cold, and by custom do not feel the hardness of the weather overmuch.

Their
cloathing.

Very singular.

Giants.

Others have a strange way of cloathing themselves, which is to gather a certain earth with roots about it, to give it a consistency; and others cloath themselves with feathers, as brother *Gregory* of *Leon* reports in his map. They are all tall men, and in some places there are giants, as the *Dutch* relate, who say, they found skulls that would contain within them some of their heads; for they us'd to put them on like helmets: they found also dead mens bones of ten and eleven foot long, whose bodies by consequence must have been thirty foot high, which is a prodigious thing. Those whom they saw alive, were generally taller by the head and shoulders than the *Dutch*. This appears by the relation of general *Schewten*; and from that of *George Spilberg* we learn, that when they were in the *Streights* of *Magellan*, they came to an *Island*, which they call'd the *Island* of *Patagoons*, or giants, because of some they saw there, and on the *Tierra del Fuego*. Among the rest, they saw one who was upon a rock, to see the ships go by, and they say of him, that he was *immanis admodum, & horrendæ longitudinis*.

Likewise we know, from the fleet commanded by *Don Fray Garcia, Josre de Loaisa*, a knight of *St. John's* order, that at the cape of the *Eleven thousand Virgins* they found the footsteps of men of a large stature, and met two canoos of savages, whom, because of their strength and stature, they call'd giants: they came near the ships, and seem'd to threaten them; but those of the ship endeavouring to follow them, they could not come up with them, for they rowed so swiftly, they seem'd to fly. 'Tis probable these canoos were made of the ribs of whales, which are there in abundance; and they found one before with the fides and steerage of whalebone.

Good rowers.

Canoos of whalebone.

In another voyage, made by *Thomas*

Candish, an *English* gentleman, they found in a port, (in a very inaccessible place,) a company of *Indians*, very lusty men, who notwithstanding the prodigious cold of that country, lived in the woods like satyrs, and shewed so much strength, that they would throw stones of three or four pound weight a great way. We read likewise in the relation of the voyage of *Magellan*, that as he winter'd in the bay and river of *St. John*, there came to the ship six *Indians* so tall, that the lowest of them was taller than the tallest *Spaniard* aboard; that having made a great kettle of the sweepings of the bisket for them, enough for twenty men, those six eat it up entirely, without leaving a crum of it. *Magellan* gave them a sort of coats of red wooll, with which they were much pleas'd, never having seen any before; their ordinary wear being deer skins. They learn'd from them, that in the summer they us'd to come down to the sea-side to live, but in the winter they withdrew more into the heart of the country. We know likewise by these same authors, that the number of the *Indians* that inhabit those coasts, is considerable, particularly in the port called the port of *Shell fish*; where as soon as they landed great numbers of *Indians*, with their wives and children, came to them, and exchanged with them great quantities of pearl, ready wrought in points, like diamonds, very artfully, for scissars, knives, and other baubles; as also for *Spanish* wine, which pleas'd them extremely; but they came no more, for they were frighted with seeing the *Spaniards* shoot some game.

The fleet of *George Spilberg* found also great numbers of inhabitants in the land, on the other side of the *Streight*; and when the captains, call'd the *Nodales*, were by the king's order to view the *Streight* of *St. Vincent*, they found, upon a point of land of that *Streight*, great store of people. The same is said by the *Saballas*, and others, who went from *Peru* to search the *Tierra del Fuego*; and all those who have pass'd the *Streights*, have constantly seen men and inhabitants on the shoars in several places; and at one place some of *Spilberg's* men landing to pursue some birds of a very fine colour, which they saw on shoar, had scarce begun to shoot them, but they were environed with *Indians*, who attacked them so furiously with clubs, that happy was he that could make his escape to the ship; and many of them were knocked on the head.

The

OVALLE. The *Nodales* likewise saw in the bay of
 1646. *St. Gregory* great numbers of inhabitants,
 with whom the seamen drove a trade, by
 exchanging some *Spanish* trifles for gold.
 By all which 'tis apparent how well peopled
 all that coast and the *Islands* are; yet we do
 not know what sort of people inhabit the
 fourscore *Islands* discovered by *Pedro Sar-*
miento, for no body landed out of that
 fleet; but we know that the *Islanders* of
Mecba, are a peaceable civil nation, several
 ships having touch'd there, and at *Sancta*
Maria. As for the nation call'd the *Chonos*,
 they are a poor people, but good natur'd,
 as has been seen by the *Chilenians*, in whom
 the *Spaniards* have found great docility, and
 a good understanding.

The Islands
 and
 Streights
 are well-
 peopled by
 savages.

Naked peo-
 ple in a ve-
 ry cold
 country.

In the *Islands* discovered by *Francis Drake*,
 in about five and fifty degrees, of which we
 have already made mention, they met with
 canoos of men and women stark naked,
 which is the more remarkable, because of
 the excessive cold of those parts, where
 there is a continual night, without any ap-
 pearance of day, when the sun coming to
 the tropick of *Cancer*, makes our summer;
 and on the contrary, when he draws near
 the tropick of *Capricorn*, there is conti-
 nual day, without any shadow of night.

And now lately, in the year forty three,
 the *Dutch* having sent a fleet under the com-
 mand of *Anthony Brun*, which pass'd the
Streights with a design to settle at *Valdivia*,
 as they endeavour'd; they sail'd afterwar's
 into seventy degrees, where they discover'd
 an *Island*, which they call'd *Barnevelt*, in
 which they saw the footsteps of men of
 large stature, and observ'd great smoaks:
 this place was so cold, that the *Dutch* could
 not endure the rigour of the weather, which
 was nothing but frost and snow, it being
 then *June* or *July*, which is the depth of
 their winter; and a perpetual night, with-
 out seeing the sun one hour in a day. 'Tis
 a wonder how those *Islanders* pass their time
 in so much cold and darkness, without any
 thing to cover their nakedness; for want-
 ing commerce with *Chile*, or other parts in
Europe, they have neither sheep, nor goats,

nor any thing that produces wooll fit to
 make them garments. It must be own'd, *Mankind*
 that men are quite other creatures than the *naturally*
 nice imagination of some effeminate nations *hardy*.
 takes them to be; and human nature by
 custom accommodates itself to the place
 where 'tis bred, so that very often men will
 not leave that place for any other more full
 of conveniency. 'Tis for this that these
Indians shew such an aversion to leave their
 country where they were born and bred;
 and though it be a miserable one, and those
 they go to more delicious, yet there is no
 sweetness in any one like that of their own
 country.

There is a report likewise, that in the *Streights* of *Magellan* there are pigmies, but *A report of*
Pigmies.

I know not upon what it is founded; for
 all the authors that relate the voyages made
 into those parts, speak always of giants,
 or men of a gigantick form, who exceed
 us in strength and stature; and 'tis said in
 one of these relations, That the ship's men,
 in a certain place, beginning to fight with
 these *Indians*, they pull'd up great trees by
 the roots, to use them as a retrenchment,
 as we may see in a picture in *Theodore* and
Jean de Brie; but I cannot imagine how
 this report of pigmies was invented; and
 it seems to me a jest or irony, or, perhaps,
 among these giants there are some dwarfs.

That which was seen by the vice-admiral
 of *George Spilberg's* fleet, was a body of
 about two foot and a half high, which was
 buried with another of an ordinary stature
 in a grave of very little depth, and cover'd
 after the *Indian* way, with a pyramid of
 stones, in an *Island* call'd the *Great Island*,
 about the second mouth of the *Streights*;
 and from hence, perhaps, or from having
 seen some of that littleness alive, this re-
 port of *Pigmies* took its rise.

This is all the account I can give of the
 inhabitants of the *Streights*, and *Islands*
 about it. Time will, perhaps, enable us
 to be more particular, when by commerce
 we are better acquainted with them; and
 then without doubt there will not be want-
 ing authors to write about them.

C H A P. VII.

Of the Indians of Cuyo, who are on the other Side of the Cordillera, to the
 East of Chile.

THE *Indians* of the province of *Cuyo*,
 though in many things they are like
 the inhabitants of *Chile*, yet in many others
 they are not so. For first, they are not so
 white, but more copper-coloured, which
 may be attributed to the great heat they
 endure in summer. Secondly, they are not
 so cleanly, nor do not build such neat houses

The Indians
 of Cuyo
 are copper-
 colour'd.

to live in; but their habitations are wretch-
 ed; nay, some, who live in the marshes,
 make themselves holes in the sand, into
 which they go like wild beasts. Thirdly,
 they are not so laborious to cultivate their
 land, and so have not such variety of pro-
 duct as those of *Chile*. Fourthly, they
 are not so brave, nor warlike as the *Indians*
 of

of *Cbile*: their language is likewise different, and so different, that I do not know one word of the one, that is in the other; but yet the language of *Cbile* being so universal, that it is the same all over the kingdom, to the foot of the *Cordillera*; those of *Cuyo* learn'd it too, and that very perfectly; but I never observ'd that a *Cbile Indian* spoke the language of *Cuyo*, which shews the advantage that the language of *Cbile* has over the other.

In return of these advantages which the *Chilenians* have, those at *Cuyo* have some over them. And the first is in the stature, which is taller, but not so strong and well-set as the *Chilenians*, but rather raw-bon'd, without flesh. I do not remember I ever saw a fat *Cuyian* among so many as I have seen. They are likewise better workmen in some things which require patience and length of time, such as basket-work of several figures, all of straw; and yet so close work'd, that they will hold water; for which reason they make their drinking vessels of them; and as they cannot break by a fall upon the ground, they are very lasting, and the curiosities of this kind, which they make, very much valued for their work and colours.

Likewise they prepare several firs of animals, which they hunt; and they are very soft and warm for winter: they hunt and catch ostriches likewise, and make many works of their feathers, with which they adorn themselves on their festivals, mingled with the feathers of other birds. They likewise hunt the wild goats and deer, and are the masters of all the *Bezoar-Stones*, which they sell to the *Spaniards* so dear, that any one who should buy them to get by them, would make but a small profit in *Europe*.

These *Cuyians* are also more hairy, and have more beard than the *Chilenians*, though they pull their hair as the others do, but with more trouble; and they never look so smooth as those of *Cbile*. They are all well-shap'd, and nimble, and have a good air: they have also good understandings. The women are tall and slender, and I do not know that I ever saw taller: they paint their faces green, which is so well settled in their skin, that there is no getting it out: most commonly they paint only their nostrils, some their whole faces, and the men their beards and lips. Their habit is decent in both sexes: the women let their hair grow as long as they can, but the men only below their ears. In all other things are like the *Chilenians*.

They are very nimble, and good travellers, without tiring. I have seen them run up the steepest and straightest hills of the great *Cordillera*, like so many goats; and this the women will do as well as the men;

VOL. III.

may, the little children too. The women will run with their children in a cradle fastened to their backs by a strap that comes over their forehead; and with all this weight they follow their husbands with so much ease and agility, that 'tis wonderful.

For a proof of the admirable disposition of these people, in walking and running, a corrigidor and captain-general of that province told me a story about their hunting their venison, which is very singular: He told me, That as soon as they find their game out, they draw near them, and follow them upon a half trot, keeping them still in sight, without leaving them so much as to eat; and in a day or two they begin to tire them so as they can come up with them, and kill them, and return home loaded with them, where they feast upon them, with their families, till they have made an end: for these *Indians* are such gluttons naturally, that a few of them will eat up a calf, or a young heifer in a meeting: but they are as good at fasting, when they have nothing to eat; for they will pass several days with a little maize and some roots, which grow wild: they are also very dexterous archers, and often kill with their arrows the game they see.

I shall not omit a particular favour bestowed on these *Indians* by God Almighty, which is a singular instinct of tracing and following any lost thing.—Of which I shall give two examples which happened in the city of *St. Jago*.

Our college had a cart belonging to it, which stood at the gate of a garden, to which our *Seminarists* did use to go to refresh themselves: it was stole one night, and being miss'd in the morning by one of our lay-brothers, he immediately went to find out a *Guarpe*, (for that is the name they give those finding *Indians*;) he presently fell upon the scent or piste, and followed it, taking with him the lay-brother, till he came to a river, where it fail'd him: but he lost not the hopes of finding it; he crossed the river, and recross'd it again, once and twice, by so many different fords, (the man that stole it, as he since confess'd, had cross'd so many times to break the piste to the follower.) After this he went four leagues outright, and there he found it, when the man that had it, believ'd himself most safe from being discover'd.

Another time, a certain person having lost a parcel of oranges, he employed a *Guarpe*, who having led him through many streets and turnings, brought him at last to a house; where finding the door shut, he bid him knock, and go in, for there, said he, are thy oranges: he did so, and found them. There are every day experiments of this kind made by them to admiration:

U

they

OVALLE.
1646.

Basket-work that will hold water.

The Cuyians more hairy than the Chile-nians.

The women paint their faces green.

They pretend to an instinct of finding lost things.

OVALLE. they are likewise stout workers, very strong, and lasting in labour.

Next to these *Indians* of *Cuyo*, are the *Indians Pampas*, call'd so because they inhabit those vast plains, which are extended for about four hundred leagues to the east, and reach to the north sea. Those of the point of *Los Venados* are the nearest the kingdom of *Chile*, and are much of the same kind. These *Pampas* have no houses, in which they differ from all mankind; for the first thing men generally do, is to cover themselves from the inclemency of the air: and this is the thing which these *Pampas* do the least care for; perhaps, they are of opinion, that 'tis an injury to the author of mankind, to look for more shelter than he afforded men at first, which is the earth, with the heavens for vault or cover; and that to defend themselves from rain, it was enough to make any little cover, which might easily be taken away, and set up in another place.

Build no houses.

Love independency.

This they observe; and look upon it as a sort of prison or captivity, to be tied to one place: for this reason they will neither have house, nor gardens, nor plantations, or possessions, which are like chains to hinder their removal to other places; for they judge that the greatest of all earthly felicities is to have the absolute, entire, and independent use of their own free will; to live to day in one place, to morrow in another. Sometimes, say they, I have a mind to enjoy the freshness of a river side; and being weary of that, I pass to another. Otherwhile I have a mind to live in woods and solitudes; and when I am weary of their shades, I go to the open air of plains and meadows. In one place I hunt, in another I fish: here I enjoy the fruits of one territory; and when they fail, I seek out another, where they are beginning to ripen. In short, I go where I will, without leaving behind me any thing I regret or desire, which uses to be the torment of those who are fixed. I fear no ill news, for I forsake nothing I can lose; and with the company of my wife and children, which I always have, I want for nothing.

This is the account that these people give of themselves; and thus they pass a life without cares; here to day, to morrow in another place; making in an instant, with four little posts, a hut cover'd with boughs, or some hide of a beast. Their incomes are their bow and arrows, with which they provide them with flesh, with which they drink water; only sometimes they make their drink, call'd *Chicha*, of fruits of the trees, as they do in *Chile*. Their cloaths are some leaves for decency, and a skin, which is like a cloak, to cover them in other parts. They make holes in their lips, and put some

glass or brass pendants in them, and sometimes silver ones. The men let their hair grow to their shoulders, and the women as long as it will. There seems to be one thing wanting to this nation, which all other *Indian* nations have, which is the bread they make of maiz, or wheat, and some of rice: but yet they do not want a supply of this kind; for because they have not these grains, they make bread of the cuds of a tree, which we in *Spain* call *Algaroba*; and because that does not last long, they have invented a strange sort of bread made of locusts, (nay, I have heard of *Mesquitos*;) but the locusts I use to be in such vast quantities in those great plains call'd the *Pampas*, that as I travell'd over them, I often saw the sun intercepted, and the air darkened with flights of them.

The *Indians* observe where they live to rest; and those plains being here and there full of thickets, they rest in them, and chuse the highest for shelter. This the *Indians* know; and approaching softly in the night, they set fire to the thicket, which, with the high winds that reign in those plains, is soon reduc'd to ashes, and the locusts with them. Of these they make great heaps; and as they are ready roasted, they have nothing more to do, but to grind them to powder; of the flower of which they make a sort of bread, which maintains them. To the same end they use an herb call'd *Cibil*, which, either by pact with the devil, or by natural virtue, affords them a sustenance for several days, only by keeping it in their mouths, where it makes a white foam, which appears upon their lips: it is a very disagreeable sight, and made me very sick to see it.

The herb Cibil; its virtues.

Though these people are not so warlike as the *Chile Indians*, yet they are courageous, and have shewed it upon several occasions. They are very dexterous at their bows and arrows, with which they make incredible shots. But besides these, they have a very extraordinary sort of weapon of a new kind, which is made up of two bowls; the one bigger, and is a stone perfectly well rounded, about the bigness of an ordinary orange; the other is of a bladder or hard leather, which they fill with some matter of less weight than the stone: these two balls are tied strongly to each end of a strong whipcord, which they twist of a bull's pizzle: the *Indian* standing on a high ground, takes the lesser ball in his hand, and lets the other fly, holding it like a sling over his head to take aim, and hit his adversary with the heavy ball, which they direct to the head, or legs of their enemy; and thus they entangle him so, as to bring him to the ground, and then the *Indian* leaps from the height where he was, and without giving him time to disembarass himself,

A strange sort of weapon.

himself, they kill him; and this instrument is so powerful in their hands, that it not only brings a man to the ground, but a horse or a wild bull, which are very frequent in those parts, since the coming of the *Spaniards* among them.

At this time they have no wars with any; for though they do not own a subjection, yet they carry themselves to the *Spaniards* very friendly; and the reason is, because they see their towns so populous and strong, that it would be in vain for them to stir, or make any attempt against them: they have the liberty of going in and out as they please; and when they have taken a kindness for a *Spaniard*, there will come a troop

of them in harvest time to help him to get it in, and when it is over, they return to their own way of living: but there are others who come in troops to the highway, and if the *Spaniards* are not well armed, attack them in their waggons; for which reason they seldom set out but a great many together, and well provided for an encounter; but most commonly they are well pleas'd with some little present, which they ask very boldly, as if they were masters of all the goods in the waggons: they generally are content with a little biscuit or wine; but if the travellers are too niggardly, they are in danger all the way, and must owe their safety to their fire-arms.

OVALLE.
1646.

BOOK IV.

Of the first Entrance of the *Spaniards* into the Kingdom of CHILE.

CHAP. I.

The Introduction to this Book.

HAVING hitherto treated of those three parts, into which at first we divided the kingdom of *Chile*; of its soil and climate; of its temperature and properties; of its inhabitants, and their antiquity, nobility, and customs; the order of this history requires we should now treat of the entrance of the *Spaniards* into their country; since by that it has been changed much for the better in many things: and although what we have already mentioned about the *flocks, fruit, bread, wine, oil, &c.* of which they had no idea before the *Spaniards* came among them; yet this is nothing in comparison with the advantages they receive by the light of the gospel, which by the means of the same *Spaniards*, was, and is communicated to them. Upon this consideration, we may well excuse some military excesses of covetousness in some of the first discoverers and their soldiers, who as such, and men who are bred in disorder and confusion, and used to imbrue their hands in blood where they find resistance, had less regard to the strict rules of justice towards the *Indians*. But this was against all the orders of their catholick majesties, who from

the beginning recommended most strictly the preservation of the privileges of those poor people, charging all their governors, captains, conquerors, and royal ministers, that they should always have before their eyes, in the conquest of this new world, not so much the dilatation of their royal power and monarchy, as the propagation of the gospel, and the kind usage of the *Indians*, their conversion being the principal motive of the undertaking, as we shall see in its proper place.

But how is it possible, morally speaking, that human actions, though never so well design'd upon high motives, should not have a mixture of the inconveniencies which passion, not overcome by reason, produces? And so 'tis no wonder, that in the beginning of those discoveries some disorders should happen, though they never were so exorbitant as some authors make them; and particularly in *Chile* they were much less, because the inhabitants of those parts made the *Spaniards* feel their valour at their very first entrance, where they found their progress opposed with greater vigour than they imagined.

But

OVALLE. 1646. But since this kingdom is one of the considerable parts of *America*, it will be necessary first to say something of the discovery of the new world; for this being the remotest part of it towards the south, it was necessary to pass all the rest before it could be discovered; and therefore, though I have not a design to make any relation but of the kingdom of *Chile*, I shall nevertheless

touch upon the other discoveries, and follow the steps of the conquerors in order, as the histories of them do relate; so the subject of this book will be better understood, by opening the manner of the finding them, and the order of time in which this progress was made; and so place each kingdom according to its antiquity.

CHAP. II.

Of America in general, and what Light may be found of it among the Antient Philosophers.

AMERICA, called otherwise the *New World*, because of its late discovery, is now as well known as it was formerly hid for so many passed ages, not only to the vulgar, but to those piercing wits among the pagans, *Aristotle*, *Parmenides*, *Pliny*; and among the christian philosophers, to *St. Austin*, *Lactantius*, and others, who judged all that climate to be inhabitable that lay between the tropicks, founding their opinion upon a point of their philosophy, which was, That the preservation of the animal demanded by its temper the just proportion of the first four qualities, which they supposed could not be found under the torrid zone; for so they called it, because of the force of the sun upon it, it being all the year almost perpendicular to it; and having observed its effects on this side the tropicks, how it dries the earth in summer, consumes the fountains, thinking that if it did not withdraw to the other tropick, it would have entirely fired the earth, though refreshed by the nights, 'tis no wonder, if they were persuaded that where its beams were continual, there could be no habitation for man.

foundation is, That in one of the gold mines of *America*, there was found a medal, or antient coin, with the figure of *Augustus Caesar*; which, he says, was sent to the pope by *Joannes Rufo*, archbishop of *Cozensa*: but this is refuted, as ridiculous, by *Pedro Bercio* in his *Geography*; and 'tis not very probable, that that coin alone, and no other, should have been found in all this length of time, since the mines are working in the *West Indies*. But, besides, if the *Romans* had been once in possession of those parts, it would not have been easy to have lost all commerce with them, considering the great riches that communication produces; for the nations would have called in one another, as we see they have done since the discovery made by their catholick majesties, and their possessing of those parts, to which there goes every year so much people from *Europe*.

As to the *Roman* coin, 'tis probable, that some who passed from *Europe* with the first conquerors of the *Indies*, and out of a humour of spreading novelties, (which though little worth, are generally applauded by the vulgar,) feign'd he had found it in the mines; or it might fall from him, and be found by another, who carried it as a rarity to the bishop, who is said to have sent it to the pope. I am not ignorant that there are many arguments and conjectures, and those not contemptible, of some knowledge that the antients had of this so principal a part of our globe, which are related by *Abraham Ortelius Gorosio*, father *Acosta* of our company, in his first book of the *History of the Indies*, Chap. 11, 12, & 13. *Thomas Bosius*, Book XX. Chap. 3. *Malvenda*, frier *Gregory Garcia*, in the first book of the *Origin of the Indians*, taking their hints from *Plato*, *Seneca*, *Lucian*, *Arrian*, *Clemens*, *Romanus*, *Origen*, *St. Jerom*, and others, who seem to have had some knowledge of this new world. There may be seen in father *Pineda*, of our society, in the fourth book about *Solomon's Court*, Chap. 16. the words of *Abraham Ortelius*, which make very much to this purpose.

Quito temperate, though under the line.

But experience, which is the touch-stone of all philosophical discourses, has discovered that not only there is a plain passage, though troublesome, from one pole to the other, but also that those regions contained under the *Zodiack* have been, and are inhabited by innumerable nations; and that there are even under the *equinoctial* line, some places, as that of *Quito*, so temperate and healthful, that they are manifestly preferable to several in the temperate Zone. This new world has, by common consent, been called *America* unjustly enough, as *Herrera* complains in the first book of his fifth *Decade*, by the crafty usurpation of this discovery appropriated to *Americo Vesputio*, instead of *Columbus*, who by this means is deprived of his true glory.

It is not easy to make out what knowledge the antients have had of this new world: *Marinco Siculo* pretends, in his *Spanish Chronicles*, that the *Romans* had known it, and made some conquests in it; and his

C H A P. III.

What Light may be had from Scripture about this New Region.

THERE is another question which seems to be better founded, than the first; and that is, What light may be had from scripture about these remote regions? because there are many authors, who from these words of the second of *Chronicles*, Chap. iv. *The servants of Hiram brought, with the servants of Solomon, gold from Ophir*, infer, that the scripture here speaks of the *West Indies*, and interpret *Ophir* to be *Peru*, or all *America*; and as the most famous *Christopher Columbus* was the first who discovered it, so he seems to have been the first that used that expression; for they say, that when he was in the island of *Hispaniola*, he often said, that at last he was come to the desired land of *Ophir*, as is related by *Peter Martyr*, in his first book of the *Decade of the Ocean*. But he who first set out this opinion in form, was *Francis Vatable*, who upon the third book of *Kings*, in the ninth chapter, and so on, makes *Ophir* to be the island of *Hispaniola*, and the continents of *Peru* and *Mexico*. He was seconded in his opinion by *Postel Goropio*, *Arias Montano*, *Antonio Pessévino*, *Rodrigo Yepes*, *Bosius*, *Manuel de Sa*, and other authors, reported by *Pineda*, in his treaty *de rebus Solomonis*; which makes father *Martin del Rio*, of the company of *Jesús*, say, that this opinion is not without good grounds; but he who defends it most vigourously, is father *Gregory Garcia*, of the order of *St. Dominick*, in his book *De Indorum Occidentalium Origine*, where he strives mightily to clear this opinion from all objections and opposition.

The things said by these authors are not of small weight, though those who would make an inference from the word *Peru's* having a nearness to *Pharvim*, which is used by the septuagint in 2 *Chron.* iii. where speaking of the gold with which *Solomon* adorned his temple, they say, that it was of gold of *Pharvim*, which in the vulgate is translated *Aurum Probatissimum*, or most pure gold, have against them a powerful adversary, to wit, *Gareilasso de la Vega*, who affirms, that the name *Peru* is not the name of the land, but that the *Spaniards*, endeavouring to inform themselves of the country, took an *Indian*, whose name was *Beru*; and that asking him what country they were in, and he imagining they asked him his name, he answered *Beru*; and the *Spaniards* thought he had said *Peru*, and that that was the name of the country, which ever after was called so. That which, in my opinion, confirms most the belief of *Ophir*, is, that which *Solomon* says of him-

self in the book of *Wisdom*, That he *knew the disposition of the earth*; with which it seems that ignorance was incompatible; and that he could not but be informed of that great and principal part of the world; so that we may conclude he knew how to send his fleets thither, and bring home the riches of those parts: and this may be more probable, if we consider the great desire he had of gathering together all the precious things from several parts of the earth, and the purest gold, for the ornament of the temple and house of God; for the gold of *Valdivia* and *Carabay* being the purest in the world, and the precious woods of odours that are in those kingdoms, and *Paraguay* and *Brasil* the finest, it appears hard he should not use all diligence to have them, they making so much to his end, which was to gather treasure and precious things.

That he could do it, there seems no reason to doubt, since we know he had a great and powerful fleet; and if this fleet spent always three years from the time of its setting out in the *Red Sea*, to the time of its return, as the interpreters of the scripture all say, in what could they spend so much time, but in going to the utmost bounds of the east and west? and, 'tis possible, went round the world, as the ship *Victory* did since, in the same time; in which, the great Captain *Magellan* discovered and passed the *Streights* of his name; and since we know, that the fleets of the catholic kings do, in our days, penetrate to the utmost parts of the east and west in less than a year's time, why could not the same be done by those of so powerful and so wise a king as *Solomon*, who may be supposed to have understood himself, and instructed his captains and pilots in the art of navigation? Neither is it improbable, but he might know the use of the loadstone, and the sea compass, as some authors do affirm he did. This is yet more confirmed by what we have observed already about the knowledge and conjectures which the ancients had of this new world, of which he likewise could not be ignorant, but rather have a more particular insight into them, being himself so perfect in the sciences of cosmography and geography, as well as hydrography; all which he had by infusion from God Almighty, that he might see into the errors of those who believed there were no antipodes, nor that the torrid zone could be inhabited, denying the roundness of the earth, and other such mistakes.

Ophir said
to be His-
paniola.

Reasons for
Solomon's
knowing
the land of
America.

Peru how
named.

OVALLE. 1646. *The course of Solomon's fleets.* Lastly, we know, that his fleets came to Syria, Phœnicia, Africa, and Europa; and to come to those coasts, 'tis certain, that if they set out at the Red Sea, it was necessary for them to sail southward to double the cape of Good Hope, and then north, and pass the equinoctial line a second time, as the Portuguese do now in their voyages from India to Portugal. This being supposed, and that Solomon had the knowledge of America, 'tis probable he was not unacquainted with the communication of the North and South Seas by the Streights of Magellan and St. Vincent; for Solomon being so powerful, both by sea and land; and so well instructed in all things, 'tis probable he caused those shores to be searched, to find the communication of both seas, as it was since done by men much inferior to him in every thing, which were Magellan, and Jacob le Maire; or, it might be discovered by some ships driven by storms into those parts, as some say it befel the first discoverers of America.

This once supposed, those who understand any thing of navigation, and the art of the sea, cannot but know how much more easily a fleet, being placed at the cape of Good Hope in thirty six, may sail south to the fifty fourth degree, where the Streights of Magellan lie, than to sail to the north above seventy two degrees, which it must do from the cape to Europe: from whence may be inferred what I say, that if it was true that his fleet came to Africa and Europe, and entered the mediterranean sea, it was much easier to go to Chile and Peru; for from the Streights it might run before the wind all along that coast; and having taken in the gold, precious woods, silver, and other commodities, it might return by the same Streights, as Pedro Sarmiento, and others, have done to the North Sea, and so to the cape of Good Hope and the Red Sea: or, the fleet being in the South Sea, might sail west to the Philippine islands; and from thence coasting along those parts we call the East Indies, it might take in all the eastern commodities; and so having gone round the world, return loaden with all the riches of east and west, with pearls, diamonds, rubies, and other fine stones, as also musk, amber, ivory, and other valuable eastern commodities; and from the west, with gold, silver, odoriferous woods, pearls, emeralds, fine dyes, rich and fine woolls, amber, and other riches, which were wanting to make up the opulency of Solomon.

Neither ought this to be thought impracticable, since 'tis made out already in these books, how easy the navigation would be from Chile to the Philippine islands in two or three months: the conveniencies of which

navigation have been set out in the fourth chapter of the second book; and we do know how the ship *Victory* did return that way, and so have many others since: by all which the possibility of Solomon's navigation is made out, and that within the compass of the three years, in which they used to return to their port in the Red Sea; and if it did not do this, it can hardly be imagined, how it could employ such a space of time.

For these, and many more reasons of this nature, our most learned Pineda retracts the contrary opinion, which he had published in his commentaries upon Job; because, when he writ them, he had not so well examined, the grounds of the last opinion, nor weighed all the authority and strength of conjectures that attend it; and, indeed, so far every prudent man would go, as not to despise and condemn an opinion of which he believed the contrary, if it were maintained with probability, and by persons worthy to be hearkened to. Though, *Reasons against Solomon's having discovered America.* to say truth, if I must speak what I think, that one reason which I gave above against the Romans having had knowledge of those parts, [which is, That it appears incredible, that having once made the discovery, and enjoy'd those mines, not only the communication with them, but the very memory of them should be lost,] seems, in my opinion, to be as strong an argument against Solomon's fleet; for if that did once overcome all the difficulties of that navigation, what cause [could interrupt that commerce in such a manner, as that the total remembrance of it should be abolished? 'Tis true, that as to the Jews, they were a people who did not care to live in foreign parts, nor settle among other nations, nor inhabit the sea coasts; for God Almighty was unwilling, that by the communication with the gentiles, they should contract any of their customs; and therefore we do not know, that of all the race of their kings, any more than three went about any such thing, which were Solomon, who compassed it, and Josaphat and Ochobias, whose undertakings had no success. By which it may be inferr'd, that when Solomon died, and the temple was finished, this navigation was neglected, till at last it was quite forgot; besides, that it appears from the *Chronicles*, and other places of scripture, that in those times silver and gold were but little valued, the covetousness of mankind not being arrived to the height it is at now a days: they did not think it worth leaving their houses, to endure labour in the search of them, and run all those hazards which the voyagers to those parts do undergo. This therefore might take off the edge and desire which we see in the Europeans,

peans, of continuing those voyages ; neither would they desire to settle in those parts ; or if they did, the memory of them might be lost. See *Padre Pineda*, particularly in the fifth section of the sixteenth chapter, where he answers the arguments of the negative opinion ; to which he gives very handsome solutions ; and in particular, to those who say, that *Solomon's* fleet could bring nothing but gold and silver, as if this were nothing, or like ballast ; and that this were not motive enough for him to send his fleets, for a thing of which it appears he made such use, both for the temple and

his own palaces ; so that it does not seem possible he could have it all from the east, but must have recourse to the west, where there was such a mass of it, as is made out by what we have said of the mines of *Chile*, and those of the *Inga*, with those trees, fruits, and plants of massy gold, and statues of the same metal in his gardens ; besides what they call *Guasfas*, where to this day they keep concealed a vast store of those riches gathered together for the liberty of the *Inga*, when the *Spaniards* had him prisoner ; all which may be seen in what has been said already in several chapters.

OVALLE.
1646.

C H A P. IV.

Of the Discovery of America : And by what means it was performed.

AMONG the hidden and wonderful secrets of nature, we may reckon the singular virtue of the loadstone, which has produced such wonderful effects, as they seem more the object of our eyes than of our faith, as men ; for who, if they did not see it, could believe the experiments made every day, which surpass all imagination ? See the curious and elaborate treatise of father *Albanasius, Kirker*, of our company, *de arte magnetica* ; for there the most aspiring mind after curiosities will find all he can wish about this matter, as well what is ancient, as what is modern, the whole treated with so much erudition and clearness, that the study of it is not less delightful than profitable. The same subject is also treated of excellently by father *Nicholas Cabeo*, of our company, in his book of *magnetical philosophy*.

Among all the virtues of this rare stone, I think that its quality of taking up iron is not so admirable as that which it has had of drawing gold and silver to *Europe* from *India* ; the mass of which has been so great, that some curious persons having made a calculation in this matter, which they understood very well, and reckoning the millions brought by the galleons and flotas, from the discovery of the *Indies* to their time ; and having also computed the distance between *Europe* and those parts, have found that there might have been made, from the one to the other, of bars of silver, a bridge of a yard and a half wide ; so that if all that metal could be found now a-days in any one place, it would make a mountain like that of *Potosi*, from which the greatest quantity has been fetched ; and for that reason it appears hollow, and bored through in so many places. We may therefore say of the loadstone, that gold has given it a virtue like that of faith, to transport mountains, not only from one place to another, but from one world to

another, through those immense seas which separate them.

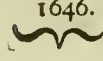
Who the first man was that applied this virtue to facilitate navigation, it is hard to prove by authors ; for though we know that this stone was known to the *Jews*, and to the *Egyptians*, yet who first made use of the sea-needle and compass, is very hard to find out. Some say it came from *China* to *Europe* : others, that it was found by the inhabitants of the cape of *Good-Hope* ; and that *Vasca de Gama*, met with some of their vessels, when he made the discovery of the cape, who used this instrument : others give the glory of it to the *Spaniards* and *Portuguese* : others to a man of the kingdom of *Naples*, called *John Goyas*, of the city of *Amalfi*, who was rather the man that perfected this invention, being himself an experienced seaman. But let every one have his opinion, it is not my business to decide ; I only say, that to this admirable virtue of the loadstone we owe the discovery of *America* : for though some authors say, that *Solomon's* fleet sailed by the observation of the stars, the winds, the flight of birds, and other signs, with which they supplied the want of this useful invention, not then known according to the common opinion, (though the contrary is not altogether improbable,) yet it must be owned that the use of this sea-needle has been the thing that has facilitated the navigation, so as the first discoverers, trusting to this, durst venture into vast seas, and pass the gulph which leads to that remote and unknown world, so as to land in it ; which was a performance worthy of immortal memory to the man who undertook and executed it.

This man was the most famous captain *Don Christopher Columbus*, a *Genoese*, whom the *Spaniards* in their language call *Colon*, who, though he were not, as he was, nobly descended, might have given by himself nobility and fame to his descendants, and

The inventor of the needle at sea.

The mass of silver brought from America.

to


OVALLE. to his noble and illustrious country ; for^{1646.} if this commonwealth had had only this son, it might draw fame enough from him alone, since his generous and bold mind was capable of overcoming all the difficulties which he met with in the project and execution of this enterprize, the more to be esteemed by the great advantages procured by it to both worlds : to this, by that vast increase of riches, of which a great deal is consecrated upon the altars in churches, besides what is employed in the furniture of princes and great men : and to the other world, the benefit of the light of the gospel, by which it is so much more polished and meliorated in all senses.

Neither does that which *Gareilasso de la Vega*, and others, do relate, any ways affect the glory of this great man, when they say, that he undertook this design upon the knowledge communicated to him by a man whom he entertained, and who died in his house as his guest ; for we must own that his chief praise does not come from what he knew of this new world before he undertook to find and conquer it, but from his generous mind and constancy in pursuing his enterprize ; and this is all his own, which puts justly the laurels upon his head, and makes his memory immortal in spite of time and envy, though one would think no body should have any for the common benefactor of two worlds. That which these authors relate about this history, is, That a pilot, an inhabitant and native of the town of *Guelva*, in the county of *Niebla*, in *Andalusia*, called *Alonso Sanches de Hualva*, or as others say, *Buxula*, used to trade with a small vessel to the *Canaries* ; and that one time, in his return to *Spain*, he met with a mighty strong *Levant*, which was so powerful, that in twenty days he found himself in one of the islands of the *West-Indies*, one of those which we call the *Islands of Barlovento*, or the *Windward Islands*, and 'tis judged it was *Hispaniola* ; from whence, fearing to perish for want of provision, he returned to the *Island of Madera*, having endured so much, that almost all his company died, and himself came in such a condition, that though *Columbus*, who loved sea-faring men, and for that reason had chosen that island to live in, received him, into his house, and took great care of him,

The story of
the pilot
who died in
the house of
Columbus.

yet he died ; but before he died, being willing to make some return for the kindness received, he called *Columbus* to him, and left him, as an inheritance, the journal he had made, with the rhumbs of wind both going and coming, and all others his observations in the voyage, and about the place where he landed.

This is thus related by *Gareilasso de la Vega*, and father *Joseph d'Acosta*, who says, he does not know the name of this pilot who left this legacy to *Columbus* : and this he attributes to the particular providence of God, who would not have the honour of this discovery be owing to any human industry, but immediately and entirely to the divine majesty, to whose disposition we ought to attribute, so much as appears contingent and casual in this ship's miscarriage, from its course and all the other accidents attending that storm, till the pilot was brought to die in the house of him whom God had chosen for a second cause and chief instrument of this enterprize ; who being of himself a great philosopher and cosmographer, compared these notions which he had from his dying guest, with his own speculations which he had long had upon the same subject ; and this made him resolve to undertake what he afterwards accomplished. In order to this he began to consider of those who were likeliest to assist him ; and first of all, he offered it to his own country, who took it for a dream ; after this, to the kings of *Portugal*, *France*, and *England* ; and at last he addressed this rich offer to their catholic majesties, for whom it was designed, from the beginning, by him who had resolved, in his providence, to amplify their monarchy by the addition of so many rich and powerful kingdoms, as they have acquired in this new world.

Columbus
offers his
discovery to
Genoa,
France,
Portugal,
and Eng-
land, who
all refuse it.

Ferdinand and *Isabella*, who are worthy of immortal glory, having examin'd the grounds *Columbus* went upon, and the honour might be done to the cross of christ, and to the preaching of his gospel, if this enterprize should take effect, having seriously considered of it for eight years together, they commanded all necessary provisions to be made, without sparing any charge, or minding the contingency of a design so new, so difficult, and so much without example.

C H A P. V.

Don Christopher Columbus sails from Spain in search of the New World.

IN the year of the birth of our saviour 1492. upon the third of *August*, about half an hour before sun-rise, (the happiest day that ever shined upon our antipodes, as

being the beginning of their greatest felicities,) *Don Christopher Columbus*, the most famous *Genoese* that ever was, sailed from *Spain*, with the title which he had received from

Columbus
had but
ninety in
two ships.

from *Ferdinand* and *Isabella*, of admiral of the seas of all those countries he should discover and conquer ; so leaving behind him the famous *berculean Streights*, as disdain- ing their *Non-plus-ultra*, and laughing at their pillars, he launch'd into the vast ocean; and begun his navigation with no less confidence than admiration of those who saw him leave the shore and steer a course never before attempted, by new rhumbs of winds. Having touch'd at the island of *Gran Canaria*, he again sailed from thence the first of *September*, with ninety in company and provisions for a year. After some days of navigation he began to find himself near the tropick of cancer, and under the *torrid zone* ; whereupon his men who had been bred in the temperate climates of *Europe*, being impatient of heats, which they never before had experienced, and wearied with seeing nothing but a vast ocean without land, began to enter into distrust of discovering any. At first they murmured only between their teeth ; but at last, speaking out boldly, they came to their captain *Columbus*, and endeavoured by all means to dissuade him from pursuing his discovery, as vain and without hopes of success ; and that it would be much better to return back to *Spain* ; but he with a generous mind being deaf to all their persuasions, pursued his voyage with constancy. His men perceiving still how he went further from *Spain*, and that they had almost worn out their eyes with looking out from the topmost-head of the ship, without finding any appearance of land, renewed their instances and reasons ; and that the more earnestly, by how much they perceived every day the consumption of their water and provisions ; calling now that temerity, which before they said might be constancy : for they al- leged that the time was increased, their provisions lessened, the winds scarce, and calms to be feared ; no land in view, its distance not to be known nor guessed at ; that the danger was certain, and no avoid- ing to perish, if they staid any longer ; therefore, said they, let us secure our lives, except we intend to be a fable and laughing- stock to all mankind, and looked upon as our own murderers.

To say truth, it cannot be denied but this was an urgent danger, and greater per- haps than can be imagined by those who never were in the like trials ; for when no less than life is at stake, all dangers appear great, and particularly at sea : besides, these allegations were of themselves of great con- sideration, and capable of shaking the great- est constancy and valour ; yet the courage of the great *Columbus* was such, and so singu- lar his prudence, that sometimes dissem- bling, and sometimes taking no notice of

VOL. III.

what he heard, but talking to this man OVALLE:
1646. and the other in private, and then comfort- ing them all up in general, and giving them some account of his well-grounded specula- tions, he so fed them with hopes and expec- tations, (he himself shewing no distrust of success,) that he brought at last his project to a happy issue. They were following their voyage thus, through all the inconveniencies of heat, ready to stifle them, when on a sudden a voice was heard crying *Land, Land* : they all flew to the prow and sides of the ship, and fixed their eyes on the ho- rizon like so many *Argus's*, to find out the land which seemed to appear like a cloud upon the sea. The desire of getting to it made some doubt, if it were land or clouds ; but others were more confident : some as- sure it to be low land ; others think they see rocks, and a large extended shore ; and all was but guesses, occasioned by the great distance they were at sea from any land ; for in truth it was not land but clouds. And this was an invention of *Columbus*, their ad- miral, who seeing them almost ready to mutiny, made use of this artifice to prevent the ill effects of their despair, causing this voice to be heard to give them a short joy, and amuse them.

This succeeded well for that time : he steered his course towards this pretended land till night ; and when they were asleep he set his prow to the west, in search of the true land : but in the morning when it was day, seeing those clouds, which they took for land, vanished as it often happens in long navigations, they began to afflict themselves a-new, and remonstrate to the ad- miral boldly to his face which I do not won- der at ; for besides the danger of perishing with hunger, they found themselves in a cli- mate so scorching and fiery, that in the third voyage that the admiral made, they being becalmed eight days, about the same place, were afraid the sun would have set fire to their ships ; for all his casks flew under decks, the hoops smoaking as if they had been set on fire, and the wheat was all in a ferment ; and the salt flesh was, as it were, boiled again, and stunk so, that, to avoid infection, they were forced to throw it over- board.

The admiral was thus pursuing his voyage, in which patience was his most ne- cessary habit, to endure the terrible persecu- tion of his own people ; when on the 11th day of *October*, of the same year, it pleased God to crown all his invincible sufferings, and the confidence he had in him, first, by Signs of
land. manifest signs of land, which in such oc- casions do generally put a stop to all com- plaints and afflictions, and are the begin- ning of joy and content, which is followed with forgetting all past sufferings. The

Y

first

OVALLE. first thing they saw was a bough of a tree new cut, with its fruit on it, which though a kind of thorn, was a branch of olive to the inhabitants of this new ark; another had seen green fish, and some pieces of wood floating; all which were clear marks of land not far off, as to the navigators from *India* are the quantity of sea-weeds which meet them about ten leagues from the coast of *Spain*. The joys which sailors and passengers shew generally at the signs of land, the capers they cut, and embraces they make each other, with their congratulations to the pilot, their thanks to heaven, nay, the tears they shed, and devout prayers they make to God and the virgin *Mary*, in acknowledgment of their protection; all these are not so much matter for my pen, as for sight and sense. All this happened to the admiral's company, which not only forgot their sufferings, and the hatred they bore to the author of them, but they run and threw themselves at his feet, as admiring and congratulating his constancy, and begging his pardon for so many hard thoughts, and as hard words, they had entertained, and let fly against him: he received them all with embraces and marks of benig- nity, assuring them that by the end of that day they should be within sight of land, and having said this, he went upon the highest part of the ship's stern, as being desirous to be the first, that should give them the good news of discovering land.

There was a rent of ten thousand *Mara- vedies* a year for the first discoverer, which made them all look out with great atten- tion; some on one side, and some on the other side of the ship, fixing their eyes where they thought it was most probable to find land; but it was about two hours before midnight, when admiral *Columbus* discover'd a light, and calling to two offi- cers, shewed it them; and presently he perceiv'd that the light chang'd place, for it was a light carried from one house to an- other, as was known afterwards when they landed: they sail'd on towards that light, and about two hours after midnight they discover'd land, which was at the same time made by the other ships in company, where- upon there were many claims for the *Albri- cias*; but at last they agreed that the *Al- bricias* belong'd to the admiral, because he first discover'd the light: this was confirm- ed by *Ferdinand* and *Isabella*, king and queen of *Spain*, and settled upon the shambles of *Seville*, as the best fund for the admiral.

Herrera, the *chronologist*, makes his re- flections upon this light, and moralizes up- on it, that it signified the spiritual light, which those nations wanted, and which was now brought to them from *Europe* by these discoverers; as a proof likewise of the piety

of the catholick kings, who having made war upon the *Moors* for three hundred and twenty years, had hardly finish'd it; but they put their shoulders to this new con- quest, to spread by their means the glory of the gospel, and make the voice of it to be heard to the utmost limits of the earth, making out by this manifest proof, how firm supports they were to the faith, since they were constantly employed in propaga- ting of it. Thus far *Herrera*: to which I may add, that the light *Columbus* saw in the middle of the night, was the tacit work- ing of reason, which being buried in pro- found errors, did yet throw out some sparks from under those ashes, and cry to heaven for the enlivening spirit to deliver it, and by the means of Christ revive it, so as to enlighten that gentilism, so long over- whelm'd in darkness, and for so many ages past buried, as it were, in the shadow of death.

Thus it was; and as soon as day broke they landed: the admiral carried with him the royal standard spread, the other captains having in theirs the banners of this con- quest, which were prepared, and had in them a green cross crown'd, and round about the names of *Fernando* and *Isabella*, to signify the hopes that those princes had entertain'd to make subject, and lay at the feet of the crucified Jesus, the crowns and scepters of those powerful monarchs of that new world; they themselves having first submitted their own, that there might be no crown, command, nor lordship, but that of the exaltation of the cross.

To this end, as soon as the admiral land- ed, kneeling down with all his company, he kissed it once, and twice; and lifting up his eyes to heaven, all in tears, he ador'd our Lord God of all things, who had brought him thither, thanking him for his favour, and doing homage to him in the name of those people, who were to be brought to his knowledge; in sign of all which, and the possession he then took, he call'd that island *Saint Salvador*: he rais'd also a most beautiful cross, which was a declaring war to hell, to make it renounce the possession of that land, which for so many ages it had tyranniz'd over.

The admiral being rose up, they all ap- proach'd, and not only embrac'd him, but carried him upon their shoulders in tri- umph, as having perform'd the greatest work that ever man attempted, or brought to pass. Immediately after this, the admiral, in presence of a notary, took possession of that land in the name of their catholick majesties, and caus'd himself to be own'd as viceroy, and as such they began to own him, and obey him in all things.

This

This island, which we shall call *Saint Salvador*, was about fifteen leagues in length, very woody, and having good water, with a lake of fresh water in the middle of it, and well inhabited by the *Indians*, who

call'd it in their tongue *Guanaani*; and it is one of those which since have been call'd the *Lucaicks*. It is nine hundred and fifty leagues from the *Canaries*. OVALLE.
1646.

C H A P. VI.

WHEN the *Indians* saw such great bulks in the sea, with great sails, and the whole unlike their canoos, and they were drawn near the shore, they remain'd astonish'd and beside themselves, because tho' by their motion they guess'd them to be living things, yet for their bigness they took them for some strange sea-monsters, never seen before on those coasts. The ships came to an anchor close by the shore, and the admiration of the *Indians* increas'd still so much the more, seeing white men come out of them with beards and cloaths; yet they did not run away, but drew near without fear, the rather when they saw that the *Spaniards* began to present them with bells, needles, and other things of *Europe*, which pleas'd them extremely, as being new to them: in return they gave the *Spaniards* Gold, Provisions, and other things of their country: they came some in their canoos, and some swimming to the ships, where it was wonderful to see how they valued every thing, even to the bits of glazed dishes, or broken earthen ware, that lay about the ships, which they gather'd up as jewels which they had never seen. And to say truth, most things borrow their value from their rarity; and for this reason they had as little value for gold and pearls, which were things very common among them, they exchanging whole strings of pearls, and some of them as big as pease and *small nuts*, for needles and bells, as happened in the *Islands* of the *Margarita*; so great is the difference in the estimation of things common, or rare ones. The admiral having here got an account of some other *Islands*, went out to discover them; and the second he found he nam'd *Santa Maria de la Conception*, dedicating it to the queen of heaven: the third he call'd *Fernandina*, of the king *Don Fernando*: the fourth he nam'd *Isabella*, in consideration of his mistress queen *Isabella*. Of all these he took possession in the name of their majesties, by setting up their royal standard before a publick notary, with the same solemnity and ceremonies observ'd in the taking possession of the first *Island*.

Cuba discovered.

On a *Saturday*, the 29th of *October*, they discover'd the famous *Island* of *Cuba*, where the *Havana* is: there the *Indians*, frighted to see the *Spaniards*, whom they thought descended from heaven, went to them kissing their hands and feet. The admiral's last discovery was of the *Island* call'd *Hisp*

paniola, where he met with a great deal of gold, and some birds and fishes, like those of *Castile*. Here the cacique *Guacanagari* received him with much humanity; and in his land he made the first *Colony*, or settlement of *Spaniards*, which he nam'd the city of the *Nativity*.

The *Spaniards* generally were receiv'd in these and other the *Barlovento Islands*, and on the coasts of *terra firma*, with much love and kindness, very few of the *Indians* offering to resist them. On the contrary, they all were pleas'd with their coming upon their lands, furnishing them with all that the country afforded, and presenting them with gold, pearls, parrots; contenting themselves with a return of a very small value. Of the *European* things, those they seem'd most to mind, were needles; and at first they could not imagine what they were good for; but being told they were to sew, they answer'd they had nothing to sew; but yet they kept them, because they had never seen any thing of iron or steel. They were much surpriz'd at the use of swords, and particularly when they had experienced their sharpness; for at first they us'd to take hold of them by the edge with great simplicity.

The simplicity of the Indians.

The admiral, as viceroy of those new kingdoms, began to govern, as he discover'd them; and that he might regulate them the better, by consulting their majesties in his doubts and difficulties, he made two voyages backwards and forwards to *Spain*, still making in his returns discovery of some new *Islands*, and amplifying the monarchy, as historians do relate at large, to whom I refer myself, not to engage in matters which are far from my subject; but I cannot but make some reflection upon what happen'd to this great man. Who would not have thought, considering the happiness with which he had executed all that he design'd, in the most difficult subject in the world, that he was eternizing his felicity, and putting fortune under his feet? But that no one may strive to do it, but that all may know how constant is her volubility, and how perpetual the motion of her wheel, and that there is no human power, nor star, can fix it, I will relate here briefly what befel him.

Let him who governs be undeceiv'd once for all, and know, That to sit upon a throne, and take possession of power, is to be a mark

1646. *OVALLE* mark for the censure of the good and bad to aim at; 'tis just putting himself into the hands of anatomists, to be taken in pieces, and examin'd to the very bones; and very often envy oppresses innocence by feigned accusations: this is not the place to examine that of the admiral; I only know that there were so many complaints, and such appearances of misdemeanors alledg'd at court against him; as, that he did not advance the conversion of the *Indians*, but make them work to get gold, desiring more to make them slaves than christians; and taking no care to maintain them, and such other imputations, as mov'd their catholic majesties to send the commander *De Bobadilla* to examine the truth of what was alledg'd, and to do justice in requisite cases; writing at the same time a kind letter to the admiral, that he should let the commander execute their orders.

But he exceeding his commission, and the intention of their majesties, took all the informations against the admiral and his brothers, and without hearing them, made himself be own'd for judge and governor, giving rewards, and publishing, that he came to relieve the oppress'd, and to pay their salaries, and put all things in good order. This drew over to him all those who had any grudge to the admiral, and most of the common sort sided with him; so he entered into the houses of the admiral and his brothers, seized their goods and their papers; all which he might safely do, without any resistance, for the admiral was away: he sent to seize him and his brothers, putting irons upon their feet, and so shipping them into a vessel, call'd a *Caravel*, he sent them away for *Spain*, to give an account of themselves.

Columbus in irons.

When they came to put irons upon the admiral, there was none so bold as to do it, if he had not had in his family a rogue of a cook, who was villain enough to do it, they had not found any one to execute so barbarous a command. When *Columbus* saw himself put in chains by his own servant, 'tis said, that shaking his head, he pronounced these words, full of resentment for his usage; [*Thus the world rewards those*

who serve it; this is the recompence that men give to those who trust in them. Have the utmost endeavours of my services ended in this? His singular expressions for it. Have all my dangers and sufferings deserv'd no more? Let me be buried with these irons, to shew that God alone knows how to reward and bestow favours, of which he does never repent; for the world pays in words and promises, and at last deceives and lies.]

Having said this, the ship set sail; and as soon as he came to *Spain*, their majesties, when they were inform'd of the prison of the admiral, were much concern'd; for by no means, had that been their intention. They sent for him to come before them; but his tears and sighs were such, that in a great while he could not speak; at last he said, assuring their majesties of his great zeal for their royal service, which had always been his guide, that if he had fail'd in any thing, it was not out of malice, nor on purpose, but because he knew no better.

Their majesties comforted him, and particularly the queen, who favour'd him most; and after some time, in which the truth of the matter was made out, they order'd, That all that the commander *Bobadilla* had confiscated of the estate of the admiral and his brothers, should be restor'd to them; as also, that the capitulation with them should be observ'd, as to their privileges and exemptions. After this, the admiral return'd a fourth time to the *Indies*, in an honourable way; and employing himself in new discoveries, he arriv'd upon the coast of the *terra firma* of *America*, the second of *November*, 1502. and coasting along by *Cubija*, arriv'd at the port; which, because it appear'd so good a one, and the country so beautiful, well cultivated, and full of houses, that it look'd like a garden, he call'd *Puerto Bello*, or the *Fine Port*, having discover'd other islands in the way, and endur'd very bad storms. At last returning back by some of those places which he had discover'd, taking, as it were, his leave of them, and returning to *Spain*, to order there a better settlement of affairs, he died at *Valladolid*, where the court was, making a very christian end, and giving great signs of his predestination. *Columbus dies at Valladolid.*

C H A P. VII.

After the Death of Columbus, the Castillians pursue the Discovery and Conquest of the new World.

AMONG those who accompanied the admiral in his first discovery, there was one *Vincent Yanes Pinzon*, who being a rich man, set out four vessels at his own charge. He, at his return to *Spain*, set sail from the same port of *Balos* upon new

discoveries: he first came to the island of *St. Jago*, which is one of the *Cape Verd* islands: he set sail from thence the thirteenth of *January*, in the year 1500. and was the first who pass'd the *equinoctial* line, by the north sea, and discover'd *Cape St. Augustin*,

Augustin, which he call'd the *Cape of Consolation*, taking possession of it for the crown of *Castile*; from thence he found the river *Maragnon*, which is thirty leagues over, and some say more at its entrance, the fresh water running forty leagues into the sea; then coasting towards *Paria*, he found another river very large, though not so broad as *Maragnon*: they took up fresh water out of it, twenty leagues at sea. He discover'd in all a coast of six hundred leagues to *Paria*, and lost two ships in a terrible storm that he endur'd. We have seen also in the last chapter, that *Columbus* had discover'd the island of *Cuba*, though he could never sail round it, being hinder'd by the storms and ill weather; so he died without knowing whether it was an island, or no, for he judged it to be rather a point of some continent; but it is a very large island, with many fair ports, and mountains full of precious odoriferous woods of cedar, ebony, and many others; and there are in it several cities of *Spaniards*, and among the rest the strong fortrefs of the *Havana*, which is a *Scala* or rendezvous for the galleons and flotas, loaded with silver from the *West Indies*: this is one of the best fortifications the king of *Spain* has in all his dominions. But, in my opinion, that which makes this island most valuable, is, the good nature and docility of those who are born in it; which was a product of that soil before ever the *Spaniards* trod it, as they shewed to *Columbus*, and those who came after him, receiving them with all kindness and humanity.

To further what the admiral *Columbus* had begun, God raised an instrument in the person of *Vasco Nunnes de Balboa*, one of the first discoverers of this new world; a man of a good understanding, as he shewed upon the occasion which I shall now relate. He was, with others, upon the discovery with general *Enciso*, the governor: they came to a place call'd *Uraba*, and as they enter'd the port, by negligence of the steersman, the governor's ship struck upon a sand, and was lost, nothing being saved out of her but the lives of the men, who got into the boats, but naked, and in danger of perishing for want of provision. *Vasco de Nunnes* said, That he remember'd there was not far off a river, the banks of which were inhabited by much people: he guided them thither; and the thing being found to be as he had said, he gain'd great reputation among them all. They came thither, and found the *Indians* in arms against the *Castilians*, whose name was already become odious to those nations: they made a vow to our lady, to dedicate to her the first settlement and church to the honour of her image, under the title of *Santa Maria la Antigua*, or the

VOL. III.

ancient *St. Mary*, which to this day is venerated in *Seville*; and to send her many rich gifts of gold and silver, which one of them, as a pilgrim, should carry in the name of the rest. Being encourag'd by this vow, they fell upon the *Indians*, and obtain'd the victory.

Presently they made a settlement, and built a town, dedicated to the virgin, calling it *Santa Maria el Antigua* of *Dairen*, because that was the name of that river. After this, to accomplish their vow, they sent the promis'd presents to the devout image of the virgin.

The good opinion of *Vasco de Nunnes* increasing thus daily, and having cunningly order'd it so, that *Enciso* resign'd his government, they chose *Vasco Nunnes* in his room: at first, with an associate; but he found means in time to be alone, as it was necessary he should, in point of command, being to overcome such difficulties as were to be met with at every turn: and, indeed, he knew how to make himself be both fear'd and lov'd, having a very good spirit of government. In the new discoveries he undertook, he came first to the lands of the *Cacique Ponea*, and not finding him at home, he destroy'd them: he pass'd on to the lands of the *Cacique Careta*, who not caring to enter into war, receiv'd him peacefully, and treated him as a friend. This *Cacique Careta* had a kinsman, who was a lord, that liv'd further in the country, and his name was *Suran*; who persuaded another neighbouring prince, call'd *Comagre*, to make a friendship with the *Castilians*: this prince had a very fine palace, which astonish'd them; and particularly when they saw, in a kind of chapel or oratory, some dead bodies lying cover'd with rich mantles, and many jewels of gold and pearls; and being ask'd whose bodies those were, they answer'd, of their predecessors; and that to preserve them from corruption, they had dried them with fire. The king caress'd the *Castilians*, and gave them great presents: he had seven sons, and one of them, more liberal, gave the *Spaniards* a present of near four thousand *Pesos* of fine gold, and some pieces of rare workmanship: they weigh'd it, and taking the king's fifths, they began to divide the remainder. In the division, two soldiers fell out about their share: the *Cacique's* son, who had made the present, hearing the noise, could not bear it, but coming to them struck the balance where the gold was weighing, and threw it all upon the ground, saying, "Is it possible you should value so much a thing that so little deserves your esteem? and that you should leave the repose of your houses, and pass so many seas, exposed to such dangers, to trouble those

Z

" who

OVALLE.
1646.A noble re-
proof of
the Span-
iards co-
vetousness.The Hava-
na.

1646. **OVALLE.** "who live quiet in their own country?"
 "Have some shame, christians, and do not
 value these things: but if you are resolute
 to search gold, I'll shew you a country
 where you may satisfy yourselves."

And pointing with his finger to the south, he told them they should see there another sea, when they had pass'd over certain high mountains, where they should see other people who could go with sails and oars as they did; and that passing that sea, they should meet with vast quantities of gold, whereof the natives made all their utensils; and that he would be their guide, and conduct them with his father's vassals; but that it would be requisite they should be more in number, because there were powerful kings, who could hinder their passage: giving them by this the first notice of *Peru* and its riches.

The first
 notice of
 the South
 Sea, and its
 riches.

This was the first knowledge and light which the *Spaniards* got of the *South Sea*, and of the gold and riches of its coasts, which gave them all great joy; so that they were impatient to see the hour of breaking thorough all obstacles, to see that sea never before heard of, and enjoy the riches of it. *Vasco Nunnes* immediately disposed all things, and went out of *Dairen*, in the beginning of *September*, in the year 1513. and going along the sea-side, to the habitation of the friendly *Cacique Careta*, he went towards the mountains by the lands of the *Cacique Ponea*; who, though at first he endeavour'd to oppose their passage, yet being advis'd by the *Indians* of *Careta*, who accompanied the *Castilians*, he presented them with gold and provisions, and gave them guides; they, in return, giving him looking-glasses, needles, knives, and other baubles, which they valued very much. Then they began to mount the mountain through the country of a *Cacique*, call'd *Quareca*, who appear'd in arms, and attack'd the *Spaniards*: he had a long robe of cotton, but all his men were naked. They began to skirmish, and threaten by their actions, to hinder the passage; but no sooner did they hear the noise, and feel the effects of the muskets, and find some to fall, but they turn'd their backs, flying like a herd of deer, frightened to see the fire, and hear the sound of the vollies, which appear'd thunder to them, and thought the *Spaniards* had thunderbolts at their command; so they left the passage free for them. The *Indians* of *Careta* had said, that from their country to the top of the highest mountain, there was the time of six suns; for by that they meant so many days journey; but the ways were so bad, that they employed five and twenty days to get to the top. A little before they were at the highest, *Vasco Nunnes de Balboa* caus'd a halt to be made, desiring to have the glory of having himself been the first man that

ever saw the *South Sea*. And so it was: he ^{Vasco} goes alone, discovers that vast ocean, and ^{Nunnes} the large bays of the *South Sea*, call'd *Pa-*^{has first}
cifick; and upon his knees, with tears in his ^{fight of the}
 eyes, lifts up his eyes to heaven, giving thanks to the great creator of all things, for having brought him from such remote parts to contemplate that which none of his ancestors had ever seen: he made a sign after this to his companions to come up, and so they all run in haste, pushing one another on; and when they were on the top, where there is a full prospect of the sea, 'tis not to be imagin'd the content they all receiv'd in admiring that vast and smooth liquid chrystal, which not being animated, did not on its side give leaps of joy, nor go out of its bed to the tops of the mountains to welcome those who came to deliver it from the tyranny the devil exercis'd over it, by infesting it with storms and tempests, and infecting the air with the breath of idolatry, which was breath'd in all those parts, both east, west, north, and south. Oh! if all the creatures of that world could have come one by one to see the good that was coming to them by means of the gospel, which dawned in those mountains; or, if the predestinated of that new world could have viewed from their cottages, and poor habitations, or rather from the deep night of their errors and sins, the sun that was beginning to enlighten them from that high mountain, and the virtue and efficacy of grace, which then began to appear to reconcile them with God, and the blood of Christ, which like a great river was falling through those precipices, till it should bath the utmost parts of the earth, and give life to those, who, being fallen and cover'd with the dark shadow, did not only not hope for life, but not so much as know it; how would the children have leap'd out of their cradles, who, to go into paradise, expected nothing but baptism, as has happened to great numbers, who just expired when they were made an end of baptizing? and the old men, who wanted only the knowledge of the gospel to shut their eyes, and being reconciled to God, fly into his glory, how they would open them, and lying upon the ground, fly, at least, with their spirit if they could not with their body, to receive the preachers of the gospel, who brought peace and a general pardon for their sins? All the other predestinated, every one according to his state, who have by this means been saved, (which are infinite,) how they would melt and cry with joy, to hear this news, which is as welcome to them, as that of the coming of Christ to the holy fathers in *limbo*, who were expecting it with such languishing desires.

C H A P. VIII.

Basco Nunnes de Balboa pursues the Discovery of the South Sea, and dies.

OVALLE.
1646.

Basco Nunnes de Balboa, having performed his devotion, and thanked our Lord, with all his companions, for so great a favour done them, as to bring them to that place, and for the favour he was about to shew to that new world, by the means of the preachers of the gospel, to whom he thus opened a way to publish it; he then bethought himself of his second obligation, which was to his king; in conformity to which, he took possession, in his majesty's name, for the crowns of *Castile* and *Leon*, of the place where he was, and of the sea which he discover'd from thence; cutting for this purpose many trees, and making great crosses, which he set up, and writ upon them the names of their majesties.

After this they began to go down from the mountain, marching always prepar'd for any encounter that they might have with the *Caciques* in their way; so, though the *Cacique Chiapes* oppos'd them with his people, who were stout and many, yet by setting the dogs at them, and beginning to fire their muskets, they were soon routed. This made the *Cacique* offer terms of peace, and receive and make much of the *Castilians*, presenting them with gold; and he prov'd so good a friend, that he pacified many other *Caciques*, who were in arms, to hinder the passage, who likewise made their presents of gold.

From the town of *Chiapes*, Basco Nunnes sent out, to discover the coasts of the *South Sea*, the captains *Francisco Pizarro*, *Juan de Escara*, and *Alonso Martin*, each to a different place: this last found two canoes dry on the shoar, and the sea below them above half a league: he wonder'd to see them so far from the sea; and as he was considering it, he perceiv'd the sea coming very fast in, and did not stay long before it set the canoes on float: he enter'd into one of them, and took witness that he was the first *European* that had ever been upon that sea. The tides on that coast ebb and flow every six hours, so as great ships will be left on shoar, the water retiring so fast, that it gives great admiration when it returns, to see so great a space cover'd so fast, that it appears an inundation.

Basco Nunnes having advice of this, came down also to the coast; and going into the sea up to the mid-leg, with a naked sword in his hand, said, That he took possession of it, and all the coasts and bays of it, for the crowns of *Castile* and *Leon*; and that he was ready with that sword, as often as it should be necessary, to make good that claim, against all that should oppose him. The *Indians* were in great amaze at

this new ceremony; and they were more surpriz'd, when they saw him, against their advice, and that of the *Caciques*, venture to cross the gulph of *Pearls*, to discover the riches of it in that commodity; though it had like to have cost him dear, for he was near perishing in crossing that arm of the sea. Now let us see (in order to undeceive those who shall read this,) how little this courage and boldness avail'd this generous conqueror of the new world, and the great things his invincible mind had brought to pass. All his military prudence and cunning, by which he made himself be respected by unknown nations, avail'd him little; for this so fortunate a great captain had a tragical end: he lost his life in *Dairen* at his return, finding there the governor *Pedrarias*, who came to succeed him. The king in sending this man had recommended to him the person of *Basco Nunnes de Balboa*, and order'd him to make use of his council, as of one who had honour'd him by his bold undertakings, and to whom for a reward he order'd the governments of *Panama* and *Coiba*, and the admiralship of the *South Sea*, which he had discover'd, and on which he had already built four ships, and got together three hundred men to go upon the discovery of *Peru*. But the said *Pedrarias* commanded him on shoar, and there seizing him, caus'd him to be beheaded publicly as a traitor. The crier went before him, crying, as is customary, that he was a traitor; which, when *Vasco Nunnes* heard, he said it was a lie, and that no man had serv'd the king with more zeal, nor more fidelity than he, nor more desir'd to extend his monarchy; but all his complaints were like voices in the desert, which were of no force against envy and emulation, which had prevail'd in his enemies, and which can never fail against those who govern. His death was much resented, and appear'd very unjust in *Spain*, because, indeed, the king lost one of his bravest captains, and one who would have discovered *Peru* with more facility, and without all those tumults, which since happened; for his prudence, valour, and zeal, were above the ordinary size.

It cannot be denied, but that the sentence may be justified according to the depositions of witnesses; but yet it was a great argument of his innocence, that which he himself said to the governor *Pedrarias*, which was, That if he had in his heart to make himself master, and independent, as they accus'd him, he would not have obeyed his call as he did, and leave his ship without any difficulty; for he had then three

The barbarity of the Spaniards one to another.

Vasco Nunnes beheaded.

The tides very rapid.

OVALLE. 1646. three hundred men all at his devotion, and four vessels, with which he might have been safe, and gone upon new discoveries, if his conscience had accused him. They add here, That an astrologer had told him, That that year he should see something extraordinary in the heavens, he should be in guard

against some great misfortune that threatened him; and that if he escap'd from it, he should be the most powerful and happy man in the whole *Indias*. And that accordingly he did see this sign, but laughed at it, as thinking himself in so high a state.

CHAP. IX.

The Discovery of the South Sea; its Ports and Islands is continued.

IT is a common passion in those who govern, either to oppose the designs of their predecessors, or at least not to execute them by their means, nor by their creatures, that their assistance may not lessen the glory, which they pretend by making themselves the authors of the enterprizes. As we have already said, *Pedarias* succeeded *Vasco Nunnes de Balboa* in the government, just as he had made the discovery of the *South Sea*; and though the king had recommended the person of *Nunnes* to him, yet he could not be brought to grant him leave to follow his discovery, though the bishop of *Dairen* advised it very earnestly; but he had resolved to give this good morsel to a creature of his, called captain *Gaspar Morales*; to whom he added, as companion, captain *Francisco Pizarro*, because of the experience he had, having been already employed in the discovery.

They set out from *Dairen*, and got to the *South Sea*, and embarking there in canoes, they came to the *Isle of Pearls*, which the *Indians* called *Tarargui*. These by this time began to endeavour to hinder the *Spaniards* from settling in their lands; but they were not able to do it, their forces being so much inferior to those of the *Castilians*, who, passing from one island to another, came at last to the largest, where was the king of almost all those nations, who took arms against the *Spaniards*, having a brave number of men, and well chosen; but they not being used to fire-arms, they soon yielded and came to composition: to which they were brought also by the fear of a famous dog, that was in the christian camp, who used to fall upon them like a lion; and they having never seen an animal of that sort, did flee him as a devil, because of the mischief he did amongst them; for they being naked, he could fasten any where without danger. The *Chiapeses*, our friends, presently interposed; and telling the king what dangerous enemies the *Spaniards* were, and of what importance their friendship was, they being invincible, he at last was prevailed upon to grant them peace. They came to his palace, which was very sumptuous, and, as they judged, better than any they had seen yet. The king received them

with marks of friendship; and, as a token of it, caused a basket of rushes full of pearls, which weigh'd five marks, to be given them; amongst which, there was one which had but few fellows in the world, (for it weighed six and twenty carats, and was as big as a small walnut,) and another as big as a muscat-pear, perfect and oriental, and of a fine colour, weighing ten half scruples. The first came from hand to hand, till it was in the empress's, who valued it as it deserved, as is told by *Antonio de Herrera* and others. They presented the king, in return, with the usual presents of pins and needles, bells, knives, and other baubles of *Europe*, which the *Indians* valued much. The *Spaniards* not being able to forbear laughing, to see the value they put upon them, the king said to them, *What do you laugh at?* And having heard what it was, he said, *We might more justly laugh at you, for valuing things so much which are of no use in life, and for which you pass so many seas. As for these knives and hatchets you give us, they are very useful instruments to men.* This was not the only return the king had for his pearls; for he had the precious pearl of faith by their means: for growing very fond of them, and being by them instructed, he and all his family received the christian religion, which was the principal end to which the *Castilians* directed all their enterprizes. They made a solemn christening; and the king, to treat his spiritual fathers, who had engendered him in the gospel, carried them to see the pearl-fishing, which was in this manner: The *Indians* dived to the bottom, having about their necks a bag full of stones, that they may sink the faster; and it served them for a ballast to keep them steady while they gathered the oysters, that the water might not buoy them up. The greatest oysters are about ten fathom deep; for when they do not go to feed, they keep as low as they can, and stick so fast to the rocks, and to one another, that it is very hard to loosen them; nay, it happens sometimes, that while they spend too much time in doing it, their breath fails them, and they are drowned: but, generally speaking, they are not in danger, because, as they gather the oysters, they


Pearls of a prodigious bigness.

A wise re- partee of an indian king.

The pearl-fishing.

A famous dog frights the poor Indians.

they put them in their bag, and lighten it of the stones, and before their breath fails they come up again with their fish. They open the oysters, and take out the pearls, which use to be many if they are small, and few if they are large. They say that among those they presented the *Castilians* at this

time, were several of the bigness of large OVALLE. 1646.  pease and hazle-nuts ; with which they returned very well pleased to have made a discovery of so rich a treasure, as well as of the rich one they had given in exchange to the king and his people, by making them christians.

C H A P. X.

Of the Discovery of the River of Plata, and the Coasts of Chile, by the Straights of Magellan.

WE have hitherto gone by the north sea to the *terra firma*, and the discovery of the *South Sea*, with intent to follow the discoveries of this new world to its utmost bounds, which is the kingdom of *Chile*, to which all this narrative is directed. We shall follow this order by the same steps that the first conquerors went ; but while they are disposing all things for this great enterprize, it will not be amiss to leave the *South Sea*, and follow those who endeavoured to discover the coasts of *Chile* by the *North Sea*. The first we shall follow is captain *Juan Dias de Solis*, who sailing from Spain the eighth of October, 1515. run along the coasts of *Brasil*, till he discovered the famous river of *Plata*, which was so nam'd, not from any silver that is found near it, or on its banks, but from some plates of that metal which the *Indians* gave the *Spaniards* ; which silver they had brought from the country about *Potosi*, with which they had communication by the means of the *Tucuman Indians*, who are the nearest on that side to *Peru*. *Solis* entered that mighty river, which, if I am not mistaken, is threescore or seventy leagues over at its first entrance, and is known at sea by its fresh water, at first, till being further in, they can see the mountains and lands that bound it. This river is one of the most famous in the world, of sweet and excellent water, being observed to clear the voice and lungs, and is good against all rheums and defluctions ; and all the nations of the *Paraguays*, who drink this water, have admirable voices, so tunable, that when they sing they appear organs ; and therefore they are all inclined to musick ; and those who come from abroad mend their voices by living there. I knew one who was born in *Chile*, and had naturally a good voice, which he mended extremely by living in *Paraguay* ; but when he left that country, and came to *Tucuman*, he lost his improvement, as he himself told me. This river has another property, which is, that it petrifies the branches of trees which fall into it. The governor *Hernan Darias*, born in *Paraguay*, a gentleman of a singular ta-

lent for government, had in his house a whole tree all of stone, which had been taken out of this river. Likewise there are formed naturally of the sand of this river. certain vessels of various figures, which have the property of cooling water. There are also certain *cocos de terra*, which contain stones in them, which at a certain time are, as it were, ripe, and burst, discovering amethysts within them ; they burst open with a great noise.

There are also bred upon its banks most beautiful birds of several kinds ; and in its streams great variety of fishes, very dainty, and in great quantity. The river is navigable every where in canoes, but not with the same canoes, because of the prodigious fall that is in the midst of it, the whole river precipitating itself into a deep gulph, from whence it runs many leagues, till it empties itself into the sea. The noise that this fall makes, the foam that it raises, the whirlpools it causes, by the rencounter of its waters, is not to be imagin'd. The land on both sides this river is very fertile : on the west side, which is the *Tucuman* side, corresponding to *Buenos Ayres*, there are several cities, as *St. Jago de Estero Cordoua*, *St. Michael la Rioga*, and *Esteco Juzuy* and *Salta*, which border upon *Peru* : these cities are not very populous, because they are in the midst of the land, and far from commerce with both seas ; but they do increase very much, particularly *Cordoua*, which, amongst other properties, has that of producing rare wits in the university governed by the *Jesuits*, who may match their professors and scholars with those of any other part, as I myself have experienced. There are likewise in this district many houses and families of men of quality and antient nobility. Higher up the river to the west, are also the cities of the *Assumption*, *Santa Fee de las Corrientes del Guayta*, and others. The city of the *Assumption* is the chief, and was peopled by gentlemen that came first to the *Indies*, and is since much increased in people, but not in riches ; because it being so far within the land, cannot have sufficient vent for its commodities,

The Rio de la Plata discovered 1515.

The virtue of the water of the Rio de la Plata.

its fall.

An university, and rare wits at the west-indian Cordoua.

1646. *OVALLE*. which are chiefly *Sugar*, and preserved fruits; among the rest they are famous for a dried sweat-meat, called *Ladrillos*, which are slices of citron, done up in *Sugar*, in the form of a tile: but the best sweet-meat they have they will give in great abundance for an apple, or any *European* fruit. In all this tract of land there are three governments, which are also bishopricks, to wit, *Paraguay*, *Rio de la Plata*, and *Tucuman*.

Higher yet on the east side are many heathen nations, who have others that answer them on the west; and among these are distributed those famous missions which our fathers of the society of Jesus have founded.

A religious digression of the author's.

I am sorry I am insensibly engaged in this matter; and I must own I have mentioned that which I cannot well explain. This is not a place for panegyrics, nor does the thread of my history admit of such large digressions; yet I cannot but stop a little, and give some consideration to that we may call miracles of grace, which are perform'd in those deserts, of which I myself have been an eye-witness, having lived some time in that holy province, to which I owe all that I am. But who can explain what those apostolical men deserve in the sight of God, who seem to have nothing of man but what is necessary to make their life more admirable, which they lead like angels in human bodies?

Who would not wonder to see in those mountains and solitudes men ill fed, worse lodged, naked, painful, and in anguish for the souls of others, when they might save their own with less trouble, enjoying the good morsels and merry days, which, without sin, and sometimes meritoriously, they might have in their own country among their friends, and in the best of *Europe*? Who can but admire to see so many youths banish themselves, and renouncing all preferment, resolve to pass all their lives like hermits, for the love of God, and zeal of the salvation of souls? Is this a work of nature? and can human force arrive to this of itself? Let us go out from this consideration, lest it be like a load-stone to draw us in further; and yet let me fly as far as I will, I cannot hinder my heart from being with them, and desiring to end my days in this employment. They who desire to see the fruit of these missions of our company, the numbers of the gentiles which they have brought from solitudes to live in cities, the great progress of the faith, and the numbers of martyrs they have consecrated to God, let him read the book made of all this by that apostolical man *Antonio Ruiz de Montoya*; and then he will be extremely edified, and admire the work, as well as the author. And so I return to the thread of my history.

Juan de Solis being landed here, found little resistance from the *Indians*, who are not so cruel nor warlike as in other parts; so he took possession of all that tract, in the name of their majesties, for the crowns of *Castile* and *Leon*, as was always the custom of the first discoverers. And he for himself took possession of those seven foot of earth which death allows to those he seizes, let them be never so ambitious, though while they are alive a whole world will not suffice them. He lies buried there; and an end was put to his discoveries.

Much about the same time, there were at his catholick majesty's court the two famous captains *Ferdinand Magellan* and *Ruy Falero*, offering their persons, valour, and industry, for to find out, either towards the south or west, an end to *America*, or some canal or streight by which both seas might communicate with each other; and so the navigation from *Europe* might be made in the same ships, in which they might go round all its coasts. They were treating upon this subject; and the *Portugal* ambassador made it his business to oppose *Magellan*, because being fallen out with his king about this discovery, he desired he might not make it for the crown of *Castile*; but at last the king having heard at *Saragoça*, in presence of his council, the reasons and grounds that *Magellan* and *Falero* went upon, he accepted their service, and honoured them with the habits of *St. Jago*; and having settled the capitulation with them, his majesty commanded the squadron to be made ready, and named the captains and officers of it; and having heard that there was a dispute risen between *Magellan* and *Falero*, about who should carry the royal standard or flag, and the like, he ordered *Falero*, as not yet well recovered of a distemper he lay under, to stay at home, and mind his health; and, in the mean time, that another squadron should be got ready, in which *Falero* should follow.

The first squadron being ready, his majesty commanded the assistant of *Seville*, that he should deliver the royal standard to *Magellan* in the great church of *Santa Maria*, of victory of *Triana*, taking at the same time from him an oath of fidelity, or homage, according to the custom of *Castile*, that he should perform the voyage with all fidelity, as a good and loyal vassal of his majesty. The captains took likewise an oath to obey *Magellan* in all things. He, after many vows, having recommended himself and his voyage to our lord, went on board the ship called the *Trinity*, and the treasurer-general in the *Victory*, (so famous for being the first that went round the world.) The other ships were the *Conception*, *St. Jago*, and *St. Antony*.

They

Magellan
sets sail for
his disco-
very.

They set sail the tenth of *August*, in the year 1519. They took the isle of *Tenerif*, then made the coast of *Guinea*, and arrived at *Rio Genneiro*; from whence they sailed on *St. Stephen's* day, and having had a great storm, they entered into the river of *Plata*: here they stay'd eight days; and then following their voyage, they had another terrible tempest, which carried away their fore-castle, and forced them to cut away their poop. They made vows to our lady of *Guadalupe* and *Monferrat*, and to *St. Jago* of *Gallicia*. It pleased God to hear them, and they took shelter in the river of *St. Julian*, but not all; for one of their ships was lost: the men got on shore, but endured so much by land to port *St. Julian* by hunger, that they seemed skeletons when they came to their companions.

Magellan's
men muti-
ny.

While they were wintering in this river, either idleness, or the great sufferings they had undergone, and those which they feared, made them mutiny against *Ferdinand Magellan*. There were some of his ships that revolted; but he with great boldness, and no less art, made himself master of them, punishing some of the guilty, and pardoning others; and for *Juan de Carthage* and his companion in rebellion, he set them ashore when he set sail, leaving them a good provision of bread and wine. It was never known whether this were sufficient to sustain them, till they should meet with some of those giants which had been with the ships, and had been treated by *Magellan*, who perhaps received them.

Sets some
mutineers
on shore,
and there
leaves
them.

Passes the
streight of
his name in
twenty days.

Magellan seeing the winter over, as he thought, set sail the seventh of *November*, which is when the summer begins in those parts; and having by land observed what he could of the *Streight*, they passed with great good fortune in twenty days, and then steering north, they coasted along *Chile*, which they left something at large, as having no knowledge of that land, *Peru* being not yet discovered. After this, they came to the *Philippine Islands*, in one of which this most courageous captain, and famous *Portuguese*, *Magellan*, died by the hands of the natives, or to say better, by his own rashness and overboldness.

Magellan
killed.

1534.

Some years after, which was that of 1534. *Simon* of *Alcazova*, a *Portuguese* gentleman of the habit of *St. Jago*, and gentleman of the chamber of the king, a great cosmographer, and one very expert in navigation, having been employ'd many years for the crown of *Castile*, made an agreement with the king to discover and people two hundred leagues from the place where *Almagro's* government should end, which was in *Chile*. He sailed from *St. Lucar* on the 21st of *September*, 1534. with five good ships, and two hundred and fifty men; and without

seeing land from the *Gomera* to the *Streight* of *Magellan*, only having touched at cape *Abre Ojos*, and the *Rio de Gallegos*, about twenty five leagues from the *Streights* mouth, he entered them on the 17th of *January*, 1535. having endured so much thirst, that the cats and dogs were come to drink wine, and the people were ready to perish. They found a great cross erected by *Magellan*, and the wreck of the ship which he lost there. There appeared about twenty *Indians*, who gave signs of much joy to see the *Spaniards*. They followed their course, keeping still the right hand, as the safest; but yet they had so furious a storm, that it carried away half their sails: it blew so, that they thought the ships would have been carried away through the air. They took shelter into a port; and because the season was so far advanced, they persuaded their general *Alcazova* to go out of the *Streights*, which he did, and return to the port of *Lions*, or of *Wolves*, which was a very good one.

OVALLE.
1646.

While they were wintering in those parts, they resolved to enter further into the country, and make discovery of those riches which the *Indians* told them were there; so having celebrated mass, they blessed the banners, and the captains took a new oath of fidelity and obedience; and with this they set out about 225 men, having fifty *arcabuses*, seventy *cross-bows*, four charges of powder and ball, which every one carried with his bread, which was about twenty six pound weight. Thus they marched about fourteen leagues; and there *Alcazova*, being a heavy man, could go no further, which was his ruin: he named a lieutenant, against whom the men mutined; for having gone ninety leagues, and their provision failing, they resolved to go back, as they did, though they had met with a river full of fish; and that their guides told them that a little further they should come to a great town, where there was a great deal of gold; for the inhabitants wore plates of it in their ears, and upon their arms: but nothing could move them; and as one mischief seldom comes alone, they resolved to make themselves masters of the ships at their return, and to kill all that should oppose them; and so they executed it. But God Almighty punished them immediately; for as they were going out of port, they lost their admiral; and then having but one ship, durst not venture for *Spain*, but put in at *Hispaniola*, where doctor *Saravia*, of the audience of *St. Domingo*, chastiz'd the most guilty. And thus the discovery of *Chile*, for that time, and that way, was disappointed; for God reserved that honour for another.

OVALLE.
1646.

C H A P. XI.

Of the Discovery of other Parts of America before that of Chile.

WHILE the ships are making ready to go to the discovery of *Peru*, it will not be amiss to touch upon the discovery of some other parts of *America* by-the-by, that at least the order of time, with which the discoveries proceeded each other, may be understood; and what we are to say afterwards about *Chile* will be made plainer, that being our chief design.

It has been said already, in its proper place, how the admiral *Columbus* discover'd the *terra firma*, or continent of *America*, in his fourth voyage from *Spain* to the *Indies*, and found the port of *Puerto Bello* 1502. the second of *November*, 1502. We have also said how *Vasco Nunnes de Balboa* having founded *Sancta Maria la Antigua* of *Dairen*, discover'd the *South Sea*, and took possession of it in the month of *September* or 1513. *October*, in the year 1513. as also that in 1515. the year 1515. *Juan Dias de Solis* discover'd the river of *Plata* the first of all discoverers.

Now we will add what is known about the discovery of other lands; amongst the which, one of the first was that of *Yucatan*, which was undertaken by captain *Francisco Hernandez de Cordoua*, in the year 1517. and the *Adelantado* of it is at this day *Don Christoval Soares de Solis*, a gentleman of an antient and noble family in *Salamanca*. This same year other *Castilians* discover'd the land of *Campeche*, where, in a chapel of the *Indians*, full of their idols, they found painted crosses, of which they were not less astonish'd than rejoiced, seeing light in darkness, and the trophies of *Christ* by the side of *Belial*; which, at last, by the *Spaniards* arrival in those parts, were better known to those barbarous people. In the year 1518. the licentiado *Espinosa*, who was nam'd deputy to the governor *Pedrarrias*, founded the city of *Panama*, which is the canal by which all the treasure of *Peru* passes to *Spain* in the galleons. This city has not increased so much as many others of the *Indies*, because being situated near the equinoctial line, its temperature does not agree with those born in *Europe*; but yet there are many constitutions that do very well there, because of the great riches that are easily acquir'd there; and those who seek them, think no air bad. There are a great many people of quality; for there is a bishoprick, a royal *Audiencia*, or court of judicature; a tribunal of royal officers, and a chapter of canons, seculars and regulars. But that which in my judgment is most

commendable in it, is the piety, mercy, and liberality of its inhabitants. I have this year receiv'd advice, that by the negligence of a female slave, the greatest part of the city was burnt; for the houses being of wood, if one take fire, 'tis hard to stop the flames: there was lost in this a great mass of riches, a great part of the loss falling on the cathedral; and a little after, there being a gathering made, though this misfortune had concern'd almost every body, who for that reason were less in a condition to contribute by way of alms, which some of them wanted, yet they gave above twenty thousand pieces of eight, and went on contributing. This was an extraordinary mark of their charity; but the ordinary ones, in which they constantly shew their generosity, are to strangers and passengers who pass from *Spain* to the *Indies*, who most of them are at a loss till they meet with some patron, or friend, or countryman, to assist them; and they would often be reduced to great extremity, if this were not, as it is, a common inn for all those people; for in the college of our company alone, though it is not yet founded, but lives upon alms, I saw, when I was there, a cloth laid at the porters chambers, where every day they provided for, and fed about fifty or sixty passengers, with bread and flesh in abundance. The same is done by other convents; and the seculars, I saw, gave them money and other necessaries. This, as to the city of *Panama*, founded in the year 1518. in which year the religious friers of *St. Dominick* and *St. Francis* pass'd from the island of *Hispaniola*, and began to found convents in *terra firma*, and the *Pearl* coast; from whence these two holy orders pursued their mission through all the land, enlightening it with their doctrine and holy examples; by which they have made such a progress among the *Indians*, that the present flourishing of the faith is owing to them, to the great saving of the *Indian* souls. The year 1519. *Ferdinand Magellan* made the discovery of the coast of *Chile*; and the same year *Hernando Cortes* went from the point of *St. Antoune la Havana* to *Corocha*, which is the first point of *Yucatan* east, to begin the conquest of the great empire of *Mexico*; of which, and the noble actions of that great man, 'tis better to be silent than to touch upon them, only by-the-by, as we should be forc'd to do; this being not a place to explain the state and grandeur of that mighty monarch *Montesuma*, who was

fove-

Panama
founded in
the year
1518.

1519.

sovereignly obeyed in so many and such great provinces. Who can express in few words all this, and the felicity that accompanied *Cortes* in all his undertakings, which were such as they appear'd possible only after they were done, seeming otherwise so high and difficult, as to be inaccessible to the extreme boldness? Indeed, it cannot be denied, but that he was assisted by heaven, whose instrument he was in planting the christian faith among those gentiles, and shewing such reverence to the preachers of it, as might serve the *Indians* for an example; a quality which will always give reputation to princes, both before God and men.

Buenos Aires founded in 1528. In the year 1528. the king sent a colony to the *Rio de la Plata*, having agreed with the merchants of *Seville* for that purpose. The city they founded was that of *Buenos Aires*, which is on the side of that river, in that part of it where it grows narrow from its large entrance at sea; and the river there is not above nine leagues over.

Carthagena founded in 1532. In the year 1532. *Cedro de Heredia* of *Madrid* sail'd from *Spain*, and founded the city of *Carthagena*, which is the first *Scala* which the *Spanish* galleons make coming from *Spain* for the *Indies*, to fetch silver. It was so call'd, because its port was like that of *Carthagena* in *Spain*; for the old name of the *Indians* was *Calamari*. He had at first an engagement with the *Indians*; and though they shewed themselves very brave, yet he beat them, and founded the city, which is at present one of the best of the *Indies*, being wall'd with stone, and so strong, that we may name it as an impregnable fortress.

The situation of Carthagena. It is situated in an island, divided from the continent by a small arm of the sea, which ebbs and flows, and comes to the bog of *Canapote*: there is a bridge or causeway there, that goes to the *terra firma*. The port is very safe, and good ships go into it by two mouths or entrances, a greater and a less; the great is sandy; and the year that I was there, they told me it was almost shut up by the sand which a river casts up against it; and now they write me word, that it is quite fill'd up, so that there is no going in, but by the lesser entrance, which makes it so much the stronger, and it is defended by a good castle; besides which, the city is well garnished with artillery, so as not to fear an invasion. The plot of the city is very beautiful, all the streets being handsomely dispos'd, the houses of free-stone, high and noble; so are the churches and convents, particularly that of the *jesuits*, which makes a beautiful prospect to the sea. Here is a custom-house for the king, and a house call'd of the *Rigimiento*, with other public buildings: it is very populous, and of a great trade, by reason of

VOL. III.

the coming of the galleons; and from them they have wine and oil; corn they have in their own territory: there resides a bishop, and there is a tribunal of the holy inquisition. The governor hath both the civil and military command: it increases every day in riches, being so situated, that it shares all the riches of *Peru*, *Mexico*, and *Spain*.

Ovalle. 1646. In the year 1540. captain *Francisco de Orellana* discover'd the great river of the *Amazones*, which is call'd also *Orellana*, and by a common mistake *Maragnon*; and went from it to *Spain*, where, upon the relation he gave of its greatness, the emperor *Charles V.* order'd him three ships, with people, and all things necessary to make a settlement. But this had no effect, because having lost half his men at the *Canaries* and *Cape Vert*, he was too weak when he got thither; yet he attempted to go up the river in two large boats, to which his fleet was reduc'd; but finding his wants of every thing, he came out again, and went by the coast of *Caracos* to the *Margarita*, where he and his people are said to have died. About twenty years after, the viceroy of *Peru* sent a good fleet under *Pedro de Orsua*; but this miscarried also, because he was killed treacherously by *Lopes de Aguirre*, who rebell'd with the fleet; but having mis'd the entrance of the river, he landed on the continent, near the island of *Trinidad*, where he was executed by order from court. Some years after this the serjeant general, *Vincente de los Reyes Villalobos*, *Alonso de Miranda*, and the general *Joseph de Villa Mayor Maldonado*, undertook the same design, but with the same fortune, death taking them away; so that they gave over at that time all attempts on *Peru* and *Quito* side. But still the same of this river continuing, *Benito Maciel*, general of *Paria*, and since that governor of *Maragnon*, and *Francisco Coello de Caravallo*, governor likewise of *Maragnon* and *Paria*, attempted its discovery up the river; and though they were back'd by the king's royal commands, yet there were many cross accidents as to hinder the execution of their enterprize.

The fathers of our company of *Jesús* attempted likewise this discovery, by the motive of saving so many souls; but beginning with a nation call'd the *Cofanes*, their progress was stopp'd by the cruel death given to father *Raphael Fernandes*, who was preaching the faith to them. Thirty years after, which was 1537. some friers of the order of *St. Francis*, mov'd by the zeal of amplifying the glory of the gospel, and by order of their superiors, went from *Quito*, in company of captain *Juan de Palacios*, and some soldiers: they began to sail down this river, and came to the *Encabellados*, or

B b

people

OVALLE. people with long hair ; but not finding the harvest ready, they return'd to *Quito*, except only two of their lay-brethren, which were *Domingo de Brieva*, and frier *Andres de Toledo*, who with fix foldiers more fail'd down as far as the city of *Paria*, a settlement of the *Portuguese*, about forty leagues from the sea. They pass'd by the city of *St. Luis de Maragnon*, where the governor *Jacomo Reymondo de Moronna*, by the information he had from these friers, caus'd seven and forty canoes to be got ready, and embark'd upon them seventy *Spaniards*, with 1200 *Indians*, some of war, and some to help to row, under the command of captain *Pedro Texeira*, who having spent a whole year in his voyage, came at last to the city of *Quito*, having discover'd and navigated the whole river of the *Amazones*, from its entrance into the sea to its source or rise.

The river of Ovellana navigated from the sea to Quito.

The viceroy of *Peru*, who at that time was the count *de Chinchon*, being inform'd of this voyage of captain *Pedro Texeira*, resolv'd to send two persons back with him for the crown of *Castile*, who might give a perfect relation of the discovery.

At this time the city of *Quito* was govern'd by Don *Juan Vasques de Acunna*, as corregidor for his majesty over both *Spaniards* and *Indians*, and who at present is corregidor of *Potosi*, who very zealously offer'd his person for one, and his fortune to raise people at his own charges, and provide them with all necessaries ; but the royal *Audientia*, considering how much he would be wanted in his office, where his prudence, experience, and zeal, had shew'd themselves, refus'd to let him go, and chose a brother of his, that they might not totally deprive his illustrious family of that glory. This brother was a father of our company of *Jesús*, and nam'd father *Christoval*

of *Acunna*, who was rector of the college of *Cuenca*, and gave him for companion, father *Andres de Arrieda* of the same company, who was professor of divinity in the same college.

They set out from *Quito*, in the year 1539. and having navigated the whole river, which, according to their account, is thirteen hundred and fifty six leagues long, (though *Orellana* makes it eighteen hundred leagues,) observ'd exactly the rise of this great river, its situation, its course, latitude, and depth, the islands it makes, the arms into which it is divided, the rivers it receives, the riches, quantities, temperature, and climate of its shores, the customs and manners of that multitude of people that inhabit it, and particularly of those famous *Amazones*. All which may be seen in a treatise made of it by father *Christoval de Acunna*, printed in *Madrid* ; and it is a relation that deserves credit, he being an eye-witness, and having examin'd various nations as he went.

These informations were well receiv'd in *Madrid* ; but the revolutions which succeeded in those kingdoms, hinder'd all further progress, and prevented those holy designs for the conversion of that great part of *America*. There are infinite numbers of *Indians* that inhabit the islands, and other parts of this river. 'Tis said they have one settlement, that is, a town above a league in length. And now omitting many other conquests, made much about the same time in the islands and coasts of the *North Sea*, and that which was made in the *South Sea* by *Xil Gonzales de Avila*, in the land of *Nicaragua*, in the year 1522. let us attend (for it is high time) to the discovery of *Peru*, of which we shall treat more at large, because it has a connexion to that of *Chile*.

C H A P. XII.

The Discovery of Peru is given to Don Francisco Pizarro, and Don Diego d'Almagro, and Hernando Loque ; and how much they endur'd in it.

THE captains Don *Francisco Pizarro*, and Don *Diego Almagro*, in company with the scholastick of the cathedral church of *Dairen*, call'd *Hernando de Loque*, came to the governor *Pedrias*, and desir'd of him, as friends, the favour of being employed in the discovery and conquests of those coasts which run south from *Panama*, where lies the powerful kingdom of *Peru*, of which at that time there was little light ; and for this they propos'd their reasons, among which, that which was of least value, they relied most

upon, and that was their experience they had attain'd under their general *Vasco Nunes de Balboa*. They met with little difficulty with the governor ; for so long as they did not desire any assistance of the king's treasure, but ventur'd their own and their lives, they easily obtain'd leave to undertake what they would. They presently bought one of the ships which *Balboa* had built for that design ; and having got together threecore men, and four horses, (for at that time horses were a great rarity,) *Hernando de Loque* said

mass ;

The first discovery of Peru attempted.

mas; and when he came to consecration, he divided the *Hostia*, or sacrament of the body of Christ, into three parts, of which he took one, and gave the other two to his two companions, offering themselves to God, with intention to propagate among those people his glorious name, and plant the christian faith amongst them by the predication of the gospel. Those who were present shed tears out of devotion, and at the same time pitied these undertakers, looking upon their enterprize as a mad one.

About the middle of *November 1524*. Don *Francisco Pizarro* having left Don *Diego Almagro* behind him, to get more people together, sail'd from *Panama* to the isle of *Pearls*, to the port of *Pinnas*, (the last discovered by *Balboa*, and after him by *Pasqual de Andagoya*,) and went up the river of the *Cacique Biru*, or *Biruquete*, to the country of *Chocama*, where he stopped to wait for his companion *Almagro*. The hardships that the *Castilians* endured of hunger and other inconveniencies are not easily to be told: twenty died starved, and the rest were sick, having no other sustenance than the bitter palmetos; yet captain *Pizarro*, without shewing the least weakness, took care of them all with great affection, which made them all love him. At that time Don *Diego de Almagro*, his companion in the undertaking, came to him: he was received like an angel, for the relief he brought: he had lost one of his eyes by the shot of an arrow, in a rencounter he had with the *Indians*. They both together pursued their conquest; but provision failing them once more, and their soldiers being almost naked, and so persecuted with mosquitos, which are infinite there, that they could not live, they began to talk of returning to *Panama*, to which *Pizarro* himself was well enough inclined; but *Almagro* exhorted them rather to die than lose patience, offering to return to *Panama* for new succour, while he should leave his companion in the island of *Gallo*.

The effect that this had, was, That he found the government altered in *Panama*, and *Pedrarias* succeeded by *Pedro de los Rios*, who hearing of the miserable condition of those *Castilians*, would not suffer *Almagro* to return to them, being desirous they should give over the enterprize as impracticable. He sent for this end a gentleman of *Cordoua*, call'd *Juan Tafur*, a man of excellent parts, equal to his noble descent, with a commission to bring those people back, that they might not all perish. He came, and signified his order to *Pizarro*, at which he was out of all patience, seeing it would be the ruin of his project. *Tafur* seeing


this, took a prudent *medium*, which was, That he should draw a line between him and *Pizarro*, who should be at the head of his men: and *Tafur* told them, That all those who resolved to return to *Panama*, should pass the line, and come on his side.

Having said this, they began to pass the line, all to thirteen and a *Mulatto*, who said they would die with *Pizarro*: and so *Tafur* returned with all the rest to *Panama*. *Pizarro remains, with thirteen and a Mulatto in the isle of Gorgona.*

Captain *Francis Pizarro* remained with his thirteen companions in an island, which, for the greater proof of his courage and constancy, happened to be the *Gorgona*, which is a picture of hell for the closeness of its woods, the asperity of its mountains, the infinity of its mosquitos: the sun is scarce ever seen in it for the continual rains that fall.

When *Tafur* came to *Panama*, and his two friends *Almagro* and *Loque* found that *Pizarro* stay'd behind with so few companions, 'tis not credible how much affliction they shewed: they solicited the president, that at least another vessel might be sent to bring them away, in case they found them alive; and after many difficulties, at last a ship was ordered after them, but upon condition to be back at *Panama* in six months: the ship sail'd, and came to the place where *Pizarro* and his companions were left. Who can express the joy and surprize of those poor abandon'd wretches, when they descried at a distance the sails of the ship? At first they could not believe their own eyes; for the desire and longing for a thing makes it appear less probable to come to pass: but at last it arriv'd; and *Pizarro* seeing himself master of a good vessel, could not forbear attempting some discovery.

They sail'd as far as the country of *Tumbese*, which is very rich; though the *Tumbese Indians* said, That their riches were nothing in comparison of what they might see further. The lord of that country having heard of the arrival of the *Castilians*, he sent presently to visit them at their ship with twelve baskets of provisions, and among the rest a sheep of that country, which was presented to them by the virgins of the temple, as to men who seemed descended from heaven, and sent by God for some great thing. The ambassadors came; and wondering to see the ship with white men who had beards, they asked them who they were, whence they came, and what they pretended. They answer'd them, That they were *Castilians*, vassals of a powerful monarch, who, though so great, had yet a greater over him, whom he owned, with all other kings, and who is in heaven, and is call'd *Jesus Christ*, in whose name they came to undeceive them of their errors in worshipping gods of stone and wood, there being but one God, creator of all things, whom

1646.  OVALLE. whom, we all ought to worship! They explained to them, That there was a heaven and hell, the immortality of the soul, and the other mysteries of our faith.

The *Indians* stood staring and gaping, hearing this doctrine, which had never been heard of before in their country; for they believ'd, that there was no other king in the world but their king *Guayanacapa*, nor other gods but their idols. Among all the things they admir'd, there were two chiefly: the one was a negro; for they never had seen one, and did believe that his colour was some strong dye; for which reason they bestowed much pains in washing his face to get it off; but when they saw that he was rather blacker, and that he shewed at the same time white teeth, for he could not hold laughing to see their simplicity, they fell a laughing too, and could not but admire such a sort of men. The other thing was the crowing of a cock, which the captain sent them with a hen of

They wonder at the crowing of a cock.

Castille: every time he crowed, they ask'd what he said; for they thought his voice articulate, like the human voice; which is an argument that they had not that kind of fowl: and *Gareilasso de la Vega* is of that opinion, answering the objection of the *indian* name they give a hen, that is, *Atagualpa*, which, he says, was a name given by the *Indians* after the coming of the *Spaniards*. The *Spaniards* having refresh'd themselves well on shore, began to desire of *Pisarro* to return to *Panama*, and gather a greater force, that which he then had being very disproportioned to his undertaking: he yielded to their persuasions, having, for this time, made discovery only as far as a place called *Santa*, which is very near the equinoctial line; and having had a more certain account of *Cusco*, its riches, and the mighty empire it was head of. So taking with him some *Indians*, and some patterns of the gold, as a testimony of the discovery, he return'd to *Panama*.

C H A P. XIII.

Captain Francisco Pisarro returns to Panama, goes from thence to Spain, and pursues his Conquest.

PISARRO being come to *Panama*, went with his two companions to the governor *Don Pedro de los Rios*, to represent to him their reasons for continuing their discovery, upon the account of the riches of the country, as well as the planting the faith in the capital of so great a monarchy, and so in all its dominions: but the governor would not agree to it; and so they resolv'd that *Pisarro* should go to *Spain*, to propose it to the king himself. He undertook the voyage; and to give more credit to what he should say, he took along with him several things proper to the country he had discovered, as pieces of gold and silver, some of those sheep we have mentioned, and some of the *Indians* themselves clothed after the manner of their country. The king was much pleas'd with them; and *Pisarro*, in his first audience, began to propose the intent of his discovery, the great hardships he had endured, he and his companions going naked, and almost starved, expos'd to the mosquitos and poison'd arrows of the *Indians*; and all this, having spent three years in this sort of life, for the increase of the gospel and his majesty's royal dominions. His majesty heard him with much attention and goodness, shewing great compassion for his sufferings, and ordering a gratification for himself, and his two companions, as also the thirteen who would not forsake him: he receiv'd all his memorials, and order'd them to be dispatch-

ed to his mind, having first made an agreement with him proportionably to his great merits. They did not believe in *Spain* (and that is an old disease every where) all that *Pisarro* said of the riches of *Peru*, and of the palaces and houses of stone which he had seen, till he shewed them the pieces of gold and silver which he had brought with him; and then the fame of that land began to spread its self, and with it the covetousness of sharing those treasures, every one blaming the governor of *Panama* for not having given the necessary assistance to the discovery.

The riches of Peru not believed in Spain.

Pisarro being dispatched with the title of *Adelantado* of the first two hundred leagues he should conquer, having also a new coat of arms, and other privileges granted to him; and taking with him four stout brothers that he had, he embark'd for the *Indies* with one hundred and twenty five *Castilians* more. He left *Sanlucar* in *January* 1530. and arriv'd at *Puerto Bello*, where he was received with great joy by his companions and friends, who were all pleas'd with the favours the king had bestow'd upon them by his means: only *Don Diego de Almagro* was not so well pleas'd that *Pisarro* had made a better bargain for himself than for him, his partner in all the undertaking; he made his complaint to him, and resolv'd to part company, and discover and conquer by himself: but being assured that as soon as the first two hundred leagues should be conquer'd

1530.

quered, he would use his interest to have him made *Adelantado* of two hundred more before any of his brothers; and so suffering himself to be persuaded, they agreed anew, and fell to preparing every thing for their enterprize. He remain'd at *Panama*; and the *Adelantado*, with his brothers, went from thence with a good crew of men, being to be followed by *Almagro*, as before. To make short about the things performed by this great conqueror, the great riches he got, and among the rest an emerald as big as an egg, which was presented to him, we will suppose him at the island of *Pura* in war with the *Tombezinos*; and there he came to a clearer information of the riches of *Cusco*, and the state in which that monarchy was at present: and because he had receiv'd a special command, and was himself inclin'd to propagate our sacred religion, as the best means of furthering his own design, the first thing he did, in landing upon the continent of *Peru*, was to build a church to God, to give a beginning to the spiritual conquest of souls. His first settlement was at *Pura*, where was built the first church that was ever erected in those kingdoms. While he was employ'd in this, he sent out to discover more lands, to know more of the state of the country. There he learnt the division that was between the two brothers *Guascar* and *Atagualpa*, which was occasion'd by the death of their father *Guayanacapa*, who was a most powerful monarch, and among other sons had these two, which were now in war, and some of his subjects follow'd the one, and some the other. *Guascar* was the lawful heir, but not so brave and warlike as *Atagualpa*, who, though a bastard, yet because he had follow'd his father in his wars from a child, drew to himself a great part of the kingdom, with which he made war upon his brother, with hopes to prevail.

The *Adelantado* Don *Francisco Pizarro* resolv'd to have an interview with *Atagualpa*, who was the nearest to the place where he was. So putting his trust in God, he set out with his small army, more to be valued for its bravery than its number, which nevertheless was feared and respected in its march. He came near the place where *Atagualpa* had his camp, which was near fifty thousand men, and sent him his ambassadors on horseback, which was a new thing in that country, to give him advice of his arrival, and the reason of it, which was, To persuade his majesty, and his vassals, to give obedience to the true king of glory, from whom is derived all the power and command that princes have on earth. *Atagualpa* receiv'd the ambassadors in a stately tent, shewing in all his behaviour a sovereign majesty; and though his courtiers

were in great admiration of the horses, which they had never seen, yet he kept his countenance, and conceal'd the effects such a novelty might have over him. He look'd upon them with some pleasure, and not as on a strange thing he had never seen; for the horses beginning to corvet, some of his *Indians* run away, whom he presently caus'd to be put to death, for having shew'd cowardice in his royal presence. He answer'd the ambassadors courteously, shewing the pleasure he should have to see and hear their general; and set a day for it, telling them, That they should not be disturbed, nor afraid to find him and his people in arms, for it was his custom to use them to it.

The day came; and *Atagualpa* marching in order with his army to the place where the *Spaniards* were drawn up, he discover'd to his captains the mind he had to make an end with those strangers, who had been so bold as to enter into his country, and come so near him without having any respect to his royal power: but he order'd them not to kill them, but to take them alive, because he would use them as his slaves; and as for the dogs and horses, he resolv'd to offer them in sacrifice to his gods. The *Castilians*, who were not totally ignorant of this false appearance of peace and friendship, though they were so few that the *Indians* were four hundred to one, yet they did not lose courage; but with confidence in God expected the encounter, taking their posts, and preparing every thing for it, though secretly, that they might not be thought the *Aggressors*. Therefore he drawing near, the *Adelantado* stay'd for him with only fifteen men, the rest being retir'd and hid, and sent him an embassy by a frier, who carried the gospel, and told him, That in those books were contained the faith, by which he and his people might be saved, and they brought it him from God Almighty.

The king heard the frier, and took the mass-book out of his hands, looking earnestly upon it: but not knowing how to read it, and taking it all for a jest and a fiction, he threw the book up into the air, making a sign at the same time to his people to fall on; which they did: and then the *Adelantado* lifting up a handkerchief, which was the signal to our men, they play'd upon them with their muskets on one hand, and the dogs and horsemen attacked them on the other, so that the victory soon appear'd for the *Castilians*; God Almighty having resolv'd to destroy that monarchy of the *Ingas*, and to remove that obstacle to the propagating of the faith, and to put that land into hands that should increase it, as their catholick majesties have done. They took the king *Atagualpa* prisoner; but treat-

Peru discovered, and a church built.

A civil war between the heirs to the empire of Peru.

OVALLE. 1646. All the Indians surpris'd at the sight of the horses.

Atagualpa designs to surprise and destroy the Spaniards.

Atagualpa summoned by a frier.

He is taken prisoner.

OVALLE. 1646. ed him with all respect due to his royal person, as the historians relate more at large. While this happen'd, which was on a *friday*, a day dedicated to the cross, in the month of *May*, in the year 1533. the army which *Atagualpa* had sent against his brother *Guascar*, near *Cusco*, overcame him and took him prisoner, and were bringing him to *Atagualpa*, without knowing any thing of what had happened between him and the *Castilians*; but on the way *Guascar* learned that his enemy was a prisoner too; and *Atagualpa* was at the same time informed of the victory he had obtained; he hearing it, shook his head, and cried, *O fortune! what is this, that I am this day a conqueror, and conquered?* *Guascar* moderated his grief with the news of his enemy's misfortune, thinking that the *Castilians* would revenge him on the tyrant, who pretended to take from him his lawful inheritance.

Guascar taken prisoner also.

Atagualpa, though a prisoner, began to make reflections in this manner: If I cause my brother to be put to death, how do I know how the *Castilians* will take it? and whether they will not put me to death for this, and remain lords of the land. If I let him come on, and he speaks with them, the justice of his cause will speak for him, and I must perish; for I cannot expect mercy from any. What remedy? He found it cunningly, as he thought: he feigned a great sadness, with a design that the *Pisarro*s, who visited him every day, should ask him what was the matter. They did accordingly; and seeing him so afflicted, desired to know the cause of that extraordinary grief. He answer'd deceitfully, That having received the news that his generals had put to death his brother *Guascar*, it gave him an exceeding grief, of which he was not to be comforted; because though they were enemies, yet he was his brother; and he could not but be much concerned at his death. All this was feigned, to see how the *Spaniards* would take it; and finding they did not seem offended at the thing, he sent orders immediately to his generals, who were coming on with his brother, that they should put him to death presently by the way; which they did, by drowning of him in a river, which amongst them is an infamous death. His cries to heaven to revenge his unjust death were useless at that time.

Guascar put to death by the order of Atagualpa.

But let no man give it to another to save his own life; for there is not a shorter, nor a more certain way for him to lose it: let him not strive by politick maxims, which an unjust and ambitious passion suggests; for though that may be an appearance of stability, yet divine justice breaks thorough it all like cobwebs, and at length leaves no

crime without its chastisement. *Atagualpa* proved himself a great example of this truth, all his artifices serving only to afford his enemies a pretext to take away his life. He had promised to fill the room where they kept him prisoner, which was a very large one, with gold and silver, besides ten thousand bars of gold, and some heaps of jewels, as an earnest, for his ransom. And though this was accepted; and that he performed it according to his promise, yet he did not obtain what he pretended; for instead of his liberty they pronounced to him a sentence of death, which he justly deserved for having put his brother to it, and tyranniz'd over that which was none of his own; and because of the advice the *Spaniards* had every day of the army that was gathering together, which if it were true, and *Atagualpa*, at liberty at the head of them, there would have been good reason to fear from his subtilty, great and irremediable inconveniences; which they thought they could no ways avoid so well as by taking his life, though with some hopes of his exchanging it for a better and eternal one, if it be true, that before he died he was instructed, and received baptism, as some say he did.

A prodigious ransom.

The Spaniards take the ransom, and perfidiously put Atagualpa to death.

About this time, which was in the year 1533. *Don Diego d'Almagro* being made marshal, came from *Panama* to *Tombez* with a good body of men and arms; and from thence he went on to help his good friend, the *Adelantado Pisarro* in his conquests, not letting his men do any injury to his *Indians* as he went. There were a hundred thousand pieces of eight given them upon their arrival; for though they were not at the battel, yet their presence confirmed the victory, and helped to keep *Atagualpa* prisoner. The remainder of the treasure, which was above a million, was divided among *Pisarro*'s men; and they being few, were all made rich, and in a condition to make discoveries of their own. The *Adelantado* sent his brother *Hernando Pisarro* to *Castile*, with the news of this happy progress of their discoveries, and of the propagating the christian faith in the conversion of the *Indians*; and he also carried with him the claim of *Don Diego d'Almagro* to two hundred leagues of land beyond his brother's, of which he was likewise to be *Adelantado*. All this he negotiated very much to the content of all; and in the year 1534. there was granted, in *Toledo*, to *Don Diego d'Almagro* the government of that which they called the new kingdom of *Toledo*, which began at a place called *Las Chinchas*, where the territory of *Pisarro* ended, and extended itself to the *Streights of Magellan*.

1533.

1534.

C H A P. XIV.

OVALLE.

1646.

*The News of the Government of Don Diego de Almagro is brought to him ;
and he goes upon the Discovery of that of Chile.*

Almagro
and Pizarro
fall out.

DON Francisco Pizarro had given commission to Don Diego d'Almagro, to take possession of *Cusco*, when the news came of the government of two hundred leagues given him by his majesty, to begin from the *Chinchas*. This caused great disturbance ; for it was believed that *Cusco* would fall into this division ; and the friends of Don Francisco Pizarro, judging this of great prejudice to Pizarro, that the marshal, even by his commission, should find himself in possession of *Cusco*, they advised him immediately to revoke the powers he had given, which he did ; and this was the first cause of the disturbance in *Peru*, which made afterwards so great a noise, and for which they both lost their lives. But I being to write the history of *Chile*, and not of *Peru*, shall leave the reader to those historians who treat of it at large. This news being known in *Truxillo*, one Diego de Agüero set out to carry it to Almagro, who was upon his march to take possession of *Cusco*. He overtook him at the bridge of *Acambay* ; and he having received it with great moderation, shewed himself above the greatness of his fortune, and gave him as an *albricias*, or present for his good news, seven thousand *Castilians*, which are near twenty thousand ducats ; and by this news he was moved to change his design of conquering a people called the *Chiriguanaes*, and treated of that of *Chile* ; for he supposed it would fall into the government he was to have, and (as *Herrera* says) moved by the informations he had of the great riches of *Chile*.

To prepare himself for this enterprize, which was like to be very chargeable, he caused a great deal of silver to be melted in *Cusco*, to draw out the king's fifths. Amongst other things, there was a man's burden of gold rings to be melted down ; and one *Juan de Lepe* being by, and taking a fancy for one of them, begged it of marshal Almagro, who shewed himself so much a gentleman, and so liberal, that he said presently, that he should not only take that ring, but that he should open both his hands, and take as many as could lie in them ; and hearing he was married, he ordered him besides four hundred crowns as a present for his wife. He shewed another piece of liberality to one *Bartholomew Peres*, for having presented him with a shield, which was, to order him likewise four hundred pieces of eight, and a silver pot weigh-

ing forty marks of silver, and had for handles two lions of gold, which weighed three hundred and forty pieces of eight ; and to one *Montenegro*, who presented him with the first *Spanish* cat that ever came to the *Indies*, he ordered six hundred pieces of eight. There are a great many stories more of his liberality and charity too, he being very generous and noble minded. Having disposed all for his enterprize of *Chile*, he caused proclamation to be made, That all those who had not some particular employment to stay them at *Cusco*, should make themselves ready to go along with him. They were all overjoy'd at this, he being extremely beloved for his liberality and courtesy ; and that they might furnish themselves with arms and horses, he caused one hundred and eighty load of silver to be brought out of his house, (in those days a load of silver was as much as a man could carry,) and twenty more of gold : this he distributed among them all. Those who were willing, gave him bonds to pay him out of what they should conquer in the land they were to discover ; for this was the way of these conquerors in gaining to his majesty this new world, having no other pay but what they could purchase.

A cat no
indian ani-
mal.

The vast
riches of
the first con-
querors in
India.

The *Inga Mango*, who was brother to *Guascar* and *Atagualpa*, had succeeded them in the government, as the son of *Guayanacapa*, who had also many others. This *Inga* had taken a great kindness for marshal Almagro ; so he gave him, as a companion in his enterprize, a brother of his, called the *Inga Paullo Topo*, and the high priest *Villacumu* ; the *Spaniards* call him *Villaoma*, or *Vileboma*, that they might by their authority not only keep all his vassals from falling upon them in the way, but rather should receive him, and make him presents. The marshal desired these two persons to go before, in company with three *Castilians*, and make a settlement or habitation at the end of two hundred leagues. The other people, and *Juan de Savedra*, went by another way ; and when they had gone one hundred and thirty leagues from *Cusco*, they founded the town of *Paria*. Here the marshal overtook them ; and he was likewise assured of the title of *Adelantado* granted him by his majesty, with the government of the new kingdom of *Toledo*, which was to begin from the borders of *new Castile* ; for so they called Pizarro's government. His friends advis'd him to return immediately,

OVALLE. diately, wherever this express overtook him, because there was one come to the city of *Los Reyes*, with a commission from the king to regulate limits of both governments to each of the *Adelantados* : but *Almagro* was so possess'd with the ambition of conquering so great and rich a kingdom as that of *Chile*, that he did not value the land he had discovered, in comparison of what he was to discover, out of which he design'd to reward his friends, and the many gentlemen that accompanied him ; so he pursued his journey ; where it will not be amiss to leave him engaged with the snows, and ill passages of the *Cordillera*, while we give a visit to the great city of *Lima*, called otherwife *de los Reyes*, because it being the head of those kingdoms, we cannot well pass it by.

Lima founded by Francisco Pizarro in the year 1555. Its situation. This city was founded by the *Adelantado* Don *Francisco Pizarro* in the year 1555. in a very pleasant plain, about two leagues from the sea, upon a fine quiet river ; which being derived by drains and cuts all over the plain, fertilize it so copiously, that it is all covered with several sorts of products, as vineyards, sugar-works, flax, garden product, and other delightful plants : and if there be any thing they want from abroad, 'tis brought them so punctually, that all their markets are supplied with all manner of delicacies that can be wished for.

A delicious place.

For this and many other delights of this city, it happens to most people who live there, that they cannot endure to think of leaving it for any other place ; so that it seems an enchanted place, where the entrance is easy, and the getting out difficult. I myself heard the *Spanish* merchants, who, the year I was there, had sold their goods themselves at *Lima*, whereas they used to sell them at *Puerto Bello*, so enamoured of it, though they stay'd but a little while there, that during our whole navigation, they could talk of nothing else ; and to say truth, it deserves their praises ; for though it cannot be denied, that some cities I have seen in *Europe* do out-do it in some things, yet few come near it, take it altogether : and, first, for riches, it is the fountain from whence all the rest of the world drinks ; its bravery in cloaths, and magnificency of the court, out-does all others : 'tis extraordinary populous ; for a father of our company, who had the care of catechising the negroes, told me, they were at least sixty thousand, and more, that came to confession. They have sumptuous buildings, though outwardly they make no shew, having no tiles ; for it never rains all the year round : all the furniture, as pictures, beds, &c. are mighty rich. There are great numbers of coaches, and abundance of gentry ; all the inhabitants very rich, merchants of great stocks, tradesmen and han-

Its magnificence.

It never rains at Lima.

dicraftsmen of all professions. But that which is to me most considerable, is, what belongs to the worship of God, and cult of religion ; for the cathedral church, and all the parish churches are very sumptuous, and provided of admirable learned men, which come out of that university ; of which those of the country are not the least to be valued, having furnished so many preachers and other subjects for all other dignities, even to the highest government. What shall I say of the orders of friers and nuns ? I scarce know one order that has not two or three convents in the city, beautiful cloisters, great buildings, and yet greater churches ; some after the old fashion ; all with burnished gold from top to bottom, as are those of St. *Augustin*, and St. *Dominick* : others after the modern way, with curious well-wrought ceilings ; as is that of the *Jesuits*, and of our lady of *Mercedes*, which are of a very fine architecture. There are eight nunneries, some of which have above two hundred nuns in them. There are besides many oratories, confraternities, hospitals, and congregations. In our convent alone of the *Jesuits*, I remember there were eight foundations of several kinds, and for people of as many different ranks and estates in the world. The great congregation has few in the world equal to it : the chappel of it is very large, and of a very rich material, covered with silk and gold, and rare pictures, with other rich ornaments belonging to it. There is here great frequentation of the sacraments by monthly communions : the body of Christ is exposed, and the church so adorned with musick and sweet smells, that it is a paradise upon earth. And amongst other pieces of devotion performed by this congregation, there is a great entertainment or treat given once a year at an hospital, which is so magnificent, that it is worth seeing : the same is done in proportion by the other congregations.

This city is the seat of a viceroy, who indeed is a king in greatness and authority, disposing of a vast number of places, commands, and posts of honour and profit. There is likewise a rich archbishoprick of great authority ; three courts, or royal audiencias ; a merchant court, which decides all matters of trade ; a famous university, in which are professors very learned in their professions ; three colleges or schools for youth, under the care of the fathers of our company of *Jesus*, in which are about one hundred and thirty professors or masters : there are every day new foundations for orphans, widows, and to retire women from lewdness : there is the famous hospital of St. *Andrew* for the *Spaniards*, and St. *Anne* for the *Indians* ; all which would require a relation by themselves.

This

The best ci-
ties in Peru
next to
Lima.

This is what I could not avoid saying about this great capital of *Peru*; and if it continues increasing as it has done for this first age, it will not have its fellow in the world. The same may be said of *Cusco*, *Arequipa*, *Cbuquizaga*, and the great town of *Potosi*, which increase so, that he who is absent a few years, does not know them when he sees them again; and the reason is,

that the veins and mines of gold and silver, which like a loadstone, have drawn so many people thither, are so far from lessening, that new ones are discover'd every day, and those richer than the old ones; for which reason there comes yearly more people, and among them much gentry, as well as tradesmen of all arts and professions, who most of them settle and increase there.

OVALLE
1646.

C H A P. XV.

The Adelantado Almagro enters into Chile, having suffered extremely by the Way.

1535.

WE left the *Adelantado Don Diego de Almagro* in a place call'd *Paria*, from whence he was to pursue his journey to *Chile*, as he did in the beginning of the year 1535. He himself going before, order'd *Juan de Sacedra* to follow with twelve horse by the royal highway thorough the province of *Las Chichas*, the chief place of which was *Topisa*, where he found the *Inga Paulo*, and the priest *Villacumu*, who presented him with ninety thousand pesos of very fine gold, it being the tribute they us'd to send the *Inga* from *Chile*, and which they were now sending, without being inform'd of the tragical accidents that had befallen the family; and there he sent back a great many *Caciques* of the countries he left behind him, and who had waited upon him thither.

The three *Spaniards*, whom he had sent with the *Inga Paulo*, and two more who joined themselves to them, being desirous of making new discoveries, and acquiring honour, and withal making their court to the marshal, went before, till they came to a place call'd *Jujuy*, which is a place or country where the people are very warlike, and eat human flesh, and who kept the *Ingas* always in great awe. This boldness cost three of the *Spaniards* their lives, though they sold them dear. The *Adelantado* being resolv'd to revenge their deaths, sent captain *Salsedo*, with sixty horse and foot, to chastise those *Indians*; but they, being alarm'd, had call'd together their friends, and made a fort to defend themselves in, and many pits with sharp stakes in them, that the horses might fall into them; with which, and many sacrifices and invocations made to their gods, they had resolv'd to expect their enemies. Captain *Salsedo* found them thus fortified, and being himself inferior in strength, sent to the *Adelantado* for relief, who sent it him under the command of *Don Francisco de Chares*; but the *Indians* then avoided engaging, and resolv'd to abandon their fort; though, not to lose all their pains, they resolv'd first to at-

tack *Don Francisco de Chares*, where they kill'd a great many, and particularly of the *Indians Yanaconas*, and carrying off the spoils, they made a safe retreat: the *Spaniards* return'd back to their chief body. Since we mention'd the *Yanaconas*, it will not be amiss to explain the signification of that word, for the better understanding of what follows.

The *Yanaconas* were, among the *Indians*, a people subject to perpetual slavery; and to be known, were bound to wear a sort of habit different from the rest. These seeing the bravery of the *Spaniards*, and how much they made themselves be fear'd and respected, began to rise against their masters, and adhered to the *Spaniards*, hoping thereby to shake off the yoke of slavery; and became cruel enemies to the other *Indians*. That which this word *Yanacona* now signifies in *Chile*, is, those *Indians* who do not belong to any particular lord; for as to freedom, there is no difference, the king having made them all free alike.

What the
Yanaconas
were.

From *Jujuy* the *Adelantado* march'd with the vanguard, pursuing his journey, leaving the rear to the care and command of *Nogarral de Ulloa*. He came to a place call'd *Chaquana*, where he found the *Indians* in arms; for though at first they were frighted with the swiftness of the horses, yet at last they grew so little afraid of them, that they took a solemn oath by the great sun, either to die or kill them all. The *Adelantado* attack'd them, and was in great danger, for they kill'd his horse under him in the engagement; but he continuing still to fight them, they resolv'd at last to retire: then he pursued his journey, with his whole army, which was of two hundred horse, and something above three hundred foot; with a great many *Indians*, as well *Yanaconas*, as others, who assisted the *Inga Paulo*. The army being thus numerous, they began to want provisions; and which was worse, they were without hopes of finding any, there being no place thereabouts that could afford it, the country being a desert,

The resolu-
tion of the
Indians of
Chile.

OVALLE. which lasted seven days, all barren ground,
 1646. and full of salt nitre; and for their com-
 fort, as they descended a hill or precipice,
 after which they hop'd for some relief, they
 met with the snows of the *Cordillera*, which
 was a sight able to freeze the boldest un-
 dertaker, considering the dangers and suf-
 ferings they were threatened with. *Herrera*,
 when he comes to this passage, says, speak-
 ing of the bravery of the *Spaniards*, and
 their patience in suffering a great deal, which
 I shall not relate, that I may not be thought
 to praise my own countrymen with affecta-
 tion; but I cannot omit some part of it:
 He says then, That to overcome such dif-
 ficulties, none could have attempted it, but
 such as were us'd to endure hunger and
 thirst, and to enter into a country without
 guides, through forests, and over great
 torrents, fighting at the same time with
 their enemies and the elements, and shew-
 ing invincible minds; marching both day
 and night, enduring cold and heat, loaded
 with their arms and provision; being all of
 them ready to put a hand to all things,
 even the most noble among them being the
 first, when a bridge or any thing was to be
 made, to turn pioneers and carpenters, and
 cut down trees, by which they were fit for
 the greatest enterprizes.

The hard-
 ships the
 Spaniards
 endured;

The *Adelantado* seeing the new, and, in
 all appearance, the insuperable difficulty
 that attended this journey, did not lose cou-
 rage, but made a bold exhortation to his
 men, telling them, That these were acci-
 dents that us'd to befall soldiers, without
 which no great honour could be gain'd,
 nor any of those riches which they sought
 after; that they should put their trust in
 God, who would not fail to assist them,
 since the planting of his faith depended up-
 on their preservation. They all answer'd
 cheerfully, that they were ready to follow
 him to death; and because example is the
 best rhetoric, he first began to enter into
 the *Cordillera*, or snowy mountains, with
 a detachment of horse going before, that
 if he found any provisions, he might send
 a share to the army, which began to faint
 for want of it. But the more he advanc'd,
 he met with nothing but vast deserts, with
 a wind so cold, that it struck them through;
 and the passage grew straiter and strait-

Particular-
 ly in passing
 the Cordil-
 lera.

er, till at last, it pleas'd God, that from
 a high hill, they discover'd the valley of
Copiapo, where the kingdom of *Chile* be-
 gins, where they were receiv'd very kindly
 by the *Indians*, out of the respect they bore
 to the *Inga Paulo*, and afforded them pro-
 visions enough to send some to the army
 which follow'd. 'Tis not possible to ima-
 gine how much they were press'd both by
 cold and hunger, both *Spaniards* and *In-
 dians*; here one would fall into the snow,
 and be buried before he was dead; another
 would lean against a rock, and remain fro-
 zen, just as if he had been alive. If any
 did but stop to take breath, immediately a
 blast of cold air left him fix'd and immove-
 able, as if he had been of iron; and a *Ne-
 groe*, who had a led horse in his hand, did
 but turn his head, and stop to see who
 call'd him, as some body did, and both he
 and the horse remain'd like two statues;
 so that there was no remedy but to keep
 moving, for it was a certain death to stop
 a little; but it could not be, but people so
 weary and so weak, must stand still some-
 times; and therefore they lost a great ma-
 ny men, strowed up and down the moun-
 tain.

A remark-
 able in-
 stance of
 excessive
 cold.

Garcilasso says, there died ten thousand
Indians and *Negroes*; of the fifteen thousand
 which went with the *Inga Paulo*, only five
 thousand escap'd; for being all natives of
Peru, and not having ever felt such cold,
 for which they were totally unprovided with
 cloaths, they died apace; the *Spaniards* be-
 ing better provided, endur'd less; and yet
Garcilasso says, they lost above a hundred
 and fifty men, and thirty horses, which was
 a great loss; others lost their fingers and
 toes, without feeling it. Their greatest
 sufferings were in the night-time; for they
 had no wood to make fire, and the *Indians*
 eat the very dead bodies out of hunger.
 The *Spaniards* with all their hearts would
 have eat the dead horses, but they could
 not stop to flea them. At last the provi-
 sions, sent them by the *Adelantado*, met
 them; so they pass'd the rest of the way
 pretty well. When they came to the val-
 ley, the *Indians* made much of them, where
 we will leave them, to see how others,
 that came after the *Adelantado*, pass the
 mountain.

CHAP. XVI.

*Others pass the Cordillera. What happened to the Adelantado in Copiapo.
 His Return from Chile. His Misfortune and Death.*

I DO not find clearly the time of the year
 in which this army pass'd the *Cordillera*:
 'tis certain it could not be in the midst of
 summer, nor in the heart of winter, because

not one of them would have escap'd, since
 the first high wind would have overwhelm'd
 them in the snow; therefore they pass'd it,
 either in the beginning, or the end of the
 winter;

winter; and most probably it was at the entrance of the winter; for if it had been at the going out of the winter, those who followed would not have run so great a hazard.

The first of these was one *Rodrigo Orgonnes*, who was left by the *Adelantado* in *Cusco*, to raise men and follow him, as he did. He lost his nails, and would have lost his fingers, if he had not taken his hand off the pole that held his tent up: others lost their eyes, their ears, and many their lives; particularly all those who were in one tent, which a storm rising carried up, and in the morning they were found all dead in the snow: they lost also six and twenty horses.

The next who passed after *Rodrigo Orgonnes*, was one *Juan de Arrada*, who brought the *Adelantado* the king's dispatches, and his commission for his government, whom we left in *Copiapo*; and it will not be amiss to see what befel him there, before he receiv'd his commission, and saw his friends. The first thing he did in this valley, was a work of charity and justice, in favour of the true lord of that land, who was not in possession of the government, because he was left a minor, under the guardianship of his uncle, who not only did not think of putting him in possession, but contriv'd to take his life, which he would have effected, if he could have got him into his hands; but the subjects, more loyal than he, had hid him out of the way. The *Adelantado* being inform'd of the truth of this matter, and being entreated by the wrong'd prince, restor'd him to the possession of his government, putting the tyrant to death.

Before this happened, at their first arrival at *Copiapo*, the *Inga Paulo* took care to look out for some gold in that little province; and in one day having got together the value of above two hundred thousand ducats, he presented the *Adelantado* with it, in the name of his brother, the *Inga Mango*; which gave the *Spaniards* great cause of admiration, seeing that in one village, and in so little time, so much gold had been found, gathering from this, how prodigious rich the country must be; and therefore *Almagro* was content to think all his pains well taken, that he had been at to come into it.

The vast riches of Chile.

The *Inga Paulo* finding his present so well received, being desirous to make his court, got from the neighbouring parts three hundred thousand ducats of gold more, which he presented to the *Adelantado*; which gave him such joy, to see that so rich a country was fallen to his lot, that he caus'd all his people to be assembled, and pulling out all the bonds and obligations made to him in *Cusco*, for the gold and silver which he had there lent them, he cancell'd them all,

one by one, declaring to his debtors, That he freely forgave them their debts, and was sorry they were not greater: and not only so, but opening his bags of gold, he began to use great liberalities; which so pleased them, that they forgot the dangers they had gone thorough, every one promising himself vast riches from such a conquest. *Francisco Lopes de Gomara*, who writes this history, says, That it was a liberality becoming a great prince, rather than a private soldier: but he adds, as a consideration of the little stability of human affairs, and the prosperity of this world, that when he died, he had no body to give a pall to cover his coffin.

But let us not afflict the reader so soon with the memory of that lamentable tragedy; let us rather follow this great captain in his good fortune. As he went further into the country, he was respected and treated as if he had been the *Inga* himself, in all the places he came to; but when he came to a nation called the *Promocoes*, which was the limits, beyond which the kings of *Peru* could never extend their empire, he found the same resistance as they had done. The *Adelantado* perceiving this, demanded succour from the *Inga Paulo*, who gave it him, by calling in the *Inga's* garrisons of the neighbouring frontier; and so the war began.

Here the *Spaniards* met with their match, and began to experience that the conquest of this part of *America* would not be compass'd by their bare appearing with their horses, dogs, and guns; or that a kingdom might be got by taking a king prisoner, and separating his army to their purposes, and so remain absolute masters of the field; for here they met with a nation, who though they admir'd their horses, and were surpriz'd to see them, yet the greatness of their courage overcame that surprize; so they met and engaged them with great valour, and many were kill'd on both sides. The *Spanish* blood, which used to be so little spilt, was here shed in abundance; and from that time to this, the slaughter of them has not ceased, so as to make either side safe.

However, the valour of the *Spaniards*, and the advantage they had over them by horses and guns, was such, as they might well depend upon, which made them conceive the conquest of *Chile* to be a work of about two years at most; as 'tis probable it would have been, if the divisions between *Almagro* and *Pizarro*, and his brothers, had not cut the thread of that enterprize, as it did that of their own lives; for they perished by one another's hands, upon points of contest about jurisdiction.

About

OVALLE.
1646.

OVALLE.
1646.

About this time the *Adelantado* being engaged with the *Indians* in a bloody war, *Rodrigo Orgonnes* arriv'd with his *Spaniards*, and so did *Juan de Arrado*, with the king's royal patents, and a commission for the government of a hundred leagues of the country; which was just as if a deluge of water had been poured upon the fire already lighted of the war with the *Promocaes*, *Cauquenes*, and *Pencos*, who were the nations that had withstood this invasion. As for the *Indians* they pretended to no more than to defend their country, and their liberty, from foreign invaders; and the *Spaniards* found themselves call'd away by more earnest motives of interest, and so turned another way. Not but that there were different opinions about what was to be done; some thought that it was better to settle where they were, the heavens and earth being both the best that they had yet discovered, and its riches such as they were witnesses of; others were of opinion to be content with what they had discovered, without exposing themselves to new dangers, and the accidents of war. But those who brought the king's commission, insisted extremely, that the *Adelantado* should go to enjoy the effect of the king's favour to him; and above all, that which mov'd *Almagro* most, was the jealousy of seeing the *Pisarro*s masters of *Peru*: to which might be added, that if he did not take possession of *Cusco*, by virtue of the king's patent, he might be in danger of remaining, at last, without any title to any thing he had. In this confusion of motives, the *Adelantado* stuck to the worst, as it happened, since he lost his life: he had it seems arriv'd to the top of fortune's wheel; and 'tis the same thing with her to stand still, and to begin to go down; which he did, till he tumbled

quite to the ground, and had his head separated from his shoulders.

The world seldom performs its promises; otherwise who could have told this great and generous man, that he should fall by those hands, to which he had lent his? The *Pisarro*s would not have been at that height, if the frankness and friendship of *Almagro* had not assisted them from the beginning with his fortune and good counsel; but nothing of all this was sufficient to save him from death by their procurement. The differences between them grew to that height, that they engaged in a battle against each other; in which the *Pisarro*s were conquerors, and *Hernando Pizarro*, the chief of them, order'd *Almagro* to be beheaded, being no ways touch'd with their antient friendship, nor the submissions and tears of *Almagro* himself, though a venerable old man, begging his compassion with a body full of honourable wounds; but as if he had been a statue of marble or brass, he shewed no signs of compassion. 'Tis granted that *Almagro* did ill, to leave the conquest of *Chile*, so well begun, and where he might have settled himself and his friends to such advantage, to go back to *Cusco*, to govern there by force, in case the *Pisarro*s should oppose him; but they also were much to be blam'd, in not coming to some agreement with their antient friend and companion; but they are inexcusable in shewing so much cruelty, as to put him to death: accordingly all their own prosperity seem'd to end with his, and to turn to a lamentable tragedy, in which they died by one another's hands, as may be seen more at large in the already-cited authors. For me, it is my business to pursue the conquest and settlement of *Chile*, which is my theme.

Almagro is beheaded by order of the Pisarro.

BOOK V.

Of the Conquest and Foundation of
the Kingdom of CHILE.

C H A P. I.

The Governor Pedro Valdivia enters Chile : He conquers and settles that Kingdom, and is the first that enters as far as Mapocho.

THE more I draw near to the relating the settlement made in *Chile* by its first founders and captains, who reduced that kingdom to the obedience of their catholic majesties, and to the knowledge of God, the more I miss those papers and records, which being so far off, I cannot have the help of in describing the particulars of the events which were very memorable at the first entrance of the *Spaniards*. I must therefore make use of such passages as I shall find up and down in the general histories of the *Indies*; and this will refresh in me the memory of what I have seen or learn'd by others; and yet I must own the knowledge and information the reader will have from hence, will be but scanty and short, such as I should have hardly attempted to publish without this apology; and desiring my readers to accept of this collection for the present, till the compleat history of *Chile* does come out, I having left men most eminent in their profession employ'd in it when I left those parts.

1537. The *Adelantado Almagro* being returned in the year 1537. to *Cusco*, colonel *Pedro Valdivia* desir'd from the *Adelantado Francisco Pizarro* leave to pursue the conquest of *Chile*, since he had power and commission from the king to grant it. He promised not to return till he should have compleated the subjection of it, and reduced it to the obedience of the crown and God Almighty. The *Adelantado*, who had it in his thoughts, because of the fame of its great riches, to follow the conquest of *Chile*, considering this gentleman to be one of the bravest captains that had come to the *Indies*, having born arms in *Italy* and *Peru*, and given a very good account of all that he had undertaken, chose him for this en-

terprize in the year 1539. giving him a year's time to prepare all things, that he might set out, as he did in the year 1540. I do not say any thing of the particulars of his journey, nor of the people he carried with him, because I am not where I can have a distinct information; only that in which all agree, is, That he got together a good body of men, both *Spaniards* and *Indians*; for these last relating what riches the *Ingas* used to draw from people who owned his empire in those parts, animated every body to this enterprize; and *Valdivia* seconding with address these impressions, made a good army, with which he set out from *Peru*.

They had almost perish'd with cold, hunger, and other inconveniencies; yet at last they arriv'd, and advanc'd at first with little difficulty; but as they went, engaging further in the country, still they found more opposition: they first came to the valley of *Copiapo*, which signifies the Seed of *Torquoises*; for there is a rock of them, of so great a quantity, that they are grown less valuable upon it, as *Herrera* says: it is a blue stone, which makes a very good shew. And since now we enter this kingdom with more advantage, and upon a steady foot of settlement, it will not be amiss to describe the valleys and places where the cities were first founded, and the other settlements, that we may not be oblig'd to look back with an useless repetition.

The valley of *Copiapo* is the first of the inhabited valleys of *Chile*, though the best part of the people are *Indians*, with a few *Spaniards*, out of which one is the *Corregidor*, who is named by the governor of *Chile*. The land is of it self very fruitful, and is made more so by a pleasant river, which runs about twenty leagues in it be-

OVALLE
1646.
1540.

Atorquoise
rock in the
valley of
Copiapo.

Descriptio
of the valley
of Copiapo.

Valdivia
undertakes
the further
conquest of
Chile, in
the year
1539.

OVALLE. fore it empties its self into the sea in a bay which makes its harbour. Here grow all forts of the natural fruits and grains of the country, and of *Europe*; the maiz yields above three hundred for one, and the ears of it are almost half a yard long, as *Herrera* and other authors relate. Though I am not inform'd as to the particular of *Valdivia*'s reception here by the *Indians*, yet I suppose it was without much contradiction; because these people were already accustomed to the foreign yoke of the *Ingas*, and had already seen and received the *Spaniards* out of respect to the *Inga Paulo*, who accompanied *Almagro*, who gave them their lawful *Cacique*, or prince, as we have seen. They had the same facility in the valleys of *Guasco*, which is about five and

twenty or thirty leagues from *Copiapo*, and that of *Coquimbo Limari*, and as far as *Quillota*. Here the *Indians* took arms, and oppos'd the *Castilians* vigorously; engaging them almost daily, as people that came to conquer and subdue their country. The governor *Valdivia* penetrated as far as the valley of *Mapocho*, though with the loss of many of his men. He found this valley extremely well peopled, because of its breadth, a rich valley, fertility, and pleasantness, being thoroughly water'd by the river of that name, which, after having run some leagues, sinks under ground, does not lose itself entirely, but appears more nobly, and comes out with a more powerful stream two or three leagues further, being much bettered in its waters, which from muddy are turn'd clear as crystal.

C H A P. II.

The Foundation of the City of St. Jago in Mapocho. The Description of its Situation.

TOwards the east, the great *Cordillera*, or snowy mountain, is a wall to this valley of *Mapocho*, and is in winter all over white, but in summer by spots here and there: to the west it has the ragged rocks of *Pouangue*, *Caren*, and *Lampa*, whose foot we may say is shod with gold (for that which is found in its mines is so fine, that a great deal was got out of them.) Neither is this valley uncovered on the sides; for to the north and south it is environed by other mountains, which, though they do not approach the *Cordillera* in height, yet are high enough to make a circle about this valley, which in several of its rocks produces gold: it is, in its diameter from the *Cordillera* to the hills of *Pouangue* and *Caren*, five or six good leagues, and from north to south, which is from the river *Colima* to that of *Maypo*, seven or eight leagues more; so that its circumference is between 26 and 28 leagues or more, if we go down as far as *Francisco del monte*, which is a place of most pleasant shady woods, where all the timber is cut for the building of the houses.

The valley of Mapocho described.

In this valley, two leagues from the great *Cordillera*, by the side of the river *Mapocho*, God has planted a mountain of a beautiful aspect and proportion, which is like a watch-tower, upon which the whole plain is discovered at once with the variety of its culture in arable and meadow; and in other places woods of a sort of oak upon the hills, which afford all the fuel necessary for the uses of life. At the foot of this mountain, which may be two miles about, the *Castilians* found many habitations of the *Indians*, to the number of eighty thousand, as authors report; which *Pedro de Valdivia* ob-

Inhabited by 80000 Indians.

serving, and guessing from thence, that it was the best part of the whole valley, he resolved to found here the city of *St. Jago*, which he began the 24th of *February* in the year 1641. It stands in 34 degrees of altitude, and longitude 77. distant from the *Meridian* of *Toledo* 1980 leagues. The form and ground-plot of this city yields to few others, and is superior to most of the old cities of *Europe*; for it is regular, like a chess-board, and in that shape, and that which we call the squares for the men, of black and white, are in the city called *Isles*, with this difference, that some of them are triangular, some oval, some round; but the square ones are all of the same make and bigness, and are perfectly square: from whence it follows, that whosoever a man stands at any corner he sees four streets, according to the four parts of the heavens. These squares at first were but of four large houses, which were distributed to the first founders; but now, by time and succession of inheritance, they have been divided into lesser, and are every day more and more divided; so that in every square there are many houses.

The Description of the situation of the city of St. Jago, capital of Chile. 1641.

Towards the north, the city is watered by a pleasant river, till it swells sometimes in winter, when it rains eight, nay twelve and fourteen days together without ceasing; for then it overflows, and does great mischief in the city, carrying away whole houses, of which the ruins may be yet seen in some places; for this reason they have rais'd a strong wall on that side; against which the river losing its strength, is thrown on the other side, and the city thereby freed from this inundation.

From

The conveniencies of the city.

From this river is drawn an arm on the east-side, which being subdivided into as many streams as there are squares, enters into every one of them, and runs thorough all the transversal streets by a conduit, or canal; and bridges are every where, as necessity requires, for the passage of carts: so that all the houses have a stream of water, which cleanses and carries with it all the filth of the city: and from this disposition of water, 'tis easy to water or overflow all the streets in the heat of summer, without the trouble of carts or other conveniencies, and that without any charge. All these rivulets empty themselves to the west, and are let into the grounds without the city, to water the gardens and vineyards that are there: which being done, 'tis let into other fields, sowed with all sorts of grain, and then returns to the great river. The inhabitants do not drink of this water, though pretty good; but it serves to water horses and other animals; therefore they fetch water from the river for their own drinking, or draw it from wells, which yield very good, and very cool: those who are yet nicer send to the springs and fountains, of which there are many in the neighbourhood, which yield most excellent sweet water. The streets of this city are all of the same bigness and proportion, broad enough for three coaches to go abreast easily: they are paved on each side

near the houses, and the middle is unpav'd for the passage of carts. There is one street that is of an extraordinary breadth, and in it fifteen or sixteen coaches may go abreast; this is to the south, and runs east and west the whole length of the city: this is call'd *La Cannada*; and though at first it did not extend beyond the city, yet now it does, and has many buildings and gardens; and there is the church of *St. Lazarus*: but there are several squares built further which enclose in again, and so it is in a good situation.

This *Cannada* is the best situation of the whole place, where there is always an air stirring, so as the inhabitants in the greatest heats of summer can sit at their doors, and enjoy the cool; to which may be added the agreeable prospect it affords, as well because of the bustle of carts and coaches, as of a grove of willows which is watered by a little rivulet from one end of the street to the other: it is besides adorned with a famous convent of *St. Francis*, the church of which is all of a white free-stone, all square stone finely cut, and a steeple of the same at one end of it, so high, that it is seen a great way off by those who came from other parts. It is divided into three parts, and has its galleries; the uppermost is a pyramid: from it one may discover on all sides lovely prospects, which delight the eye extremely, and recreate the mind.

OVALLE.
1646.
A noble street.

C H A P. III:

Of the other Edifices and Churches of the City of St. Jago.

The city of St. Jago further describ'd.

THIS city has (beside this street, called the *Cannada*, which might afford many places, such as are in great cities) another very large one, named of *St. Saturnino*; it has likewise the place of *Sancta Anna*, where has been lately built a church dedicated to that glorious saint. There is also a place called *La Placera de la Compania de Jesus*, where the front of their church makes a figure, and is a retreat or tabernacle upon the day of the procession of *Corpus Christi*. Most of the other religious houses have their places before the great porticos or entrance of their churches: but above all, is the place called the principal place, where all the business of law and commerce is driven. The two sides of the place that are east and south have buildings after the old way, though they have made very good new balconies to them, and large windows, to see the bull-fights and other publick diversions which are made there. The north-side is all upon arches of brick;

underneath which are the scriveners and publick notaries, as also the secretariships of the royal *Audiencia*, and the town-house: and overhead are the royal lodgings, with balconies to the place, with the great halls for the meeting of the town-house officers; and in the middle are the audience-rooms of the royal chancery, with their galleries to the place: and, lastly, the royal apartments, where the royal officers are lodged; and the rooms necessary for the treasury and chamber of accounts, and lodgings for the officers.

The side that lies to the west has in it, first, the cathedral church, which is of three isles, besides its chapels, which it has on each side: it is all of a fine white stone; the chief isle, or that of the middle, being upon arches and pillars of an airy and gallant architecture. The remainder of this side to the corner is taken up with the episcopal palace, which has a very fine garden, and noble apartments both high and low, with

Town-house;

1646. **OVALLE.** with a gallery supported by pillars, which answer the place ; which, if it were equally built on the east and south sides, would be one of the most beautiful and agreeable places that can be ; for it is perfectly square, and very large, with a due regard to the whole plot of the city. I doubt not but in time the two old-fashion'd sides will be pulled down, and others built on pillars and arches proportionably to the other sides.

The greatest part of the buildings, (except the publick ones, which are of a rough stone, but very hard, which the mountain of *Santa Lucia* affords, and is within the city, and some great gates and windows which are of mouldings of stone or brick,) that is to say, the ordinary buildings, are of earth and straw well beaten together, which is so strong, that I have seen great openings made in a wall, to make great gates after the modern way, and yet the wall, though a very high one, not feel it, though the house was none of the newest, but almost as ancient as the city ; for the sun bakes and hardens the earth and straw so well together, that I have seen a piece of those walls fall from a high place, and not break in pieces, though so big that a man could not carry it. At present the houses that are built are of a better form, higher, and lighter than at first, because the first conquerors were more intent upon getting gold, and spending it in sumptuous treats, and high living, with splendor and liberality, than in building palaces, as they might have done, by reason they had many hands, and the stone hard by.

In matter of buildings, this city, as most others of the *Indies*, may brag, that it imitated *Solomon*, who began with building the temple and house of God before he built his own palace. So the *Spaniards* have done all over the *Indies*, in this new world, inheriting this custom from their ancestors of *Old Spain* ; for I remember, that travelling in *Castella*, I made this observation, that let the place or village be never so small, yet it has a good church ; and even where the houses were poor, and like dove-coats, the churches were of free-stone, with a steeple of the same ; which gave me matter of edification, considering the piety of the faithful on this occasion.

Just so the *Spaniards* of the *Indies* began first to erect churches, with so much application, that they do not seem buildings made within these hundred years ; but rather such as one would think they had inherited from their ancestors, or had been built by the gentiles ; and yet there is not a church in all the *Indies*, which they have not raised from its foundation. We have already spoke of the cathedral of *St. Jago* ;

and much more might have been said of its strength and beauty, and the ornament of its altars and sacristy. There are besides several other fine churches. That of *St. Domingo*, though not of stone, is built upon arches of brick, with a great many fine chapels on each side, particularly that of *Nuestra Señora del Rosario*, which is all painted and gilt, and is frequented with much devotion. The covering of this church is of wood, and finely wrought, as well as the choir, which is also painted and gilded, with handsome knots and festoons. The sacristy is full of ornaments of brocade of gold and silver, and embroidered silks of the same ; a great deal of plate for the altar, and mouldings of the altar-piece all gilded. But this is nothing to the cloyster, which by this time is made an end of, and is of a fine architecture, two stories high ; and the lower, where the procession goes, is adorned with exquisite paintings in the four corners, where are four altars all gilded, and light as a bright flame : the apartment at the entrance is also finely set off with pictures of saints of the order, of excellent hands.

The convent of *St. Francis* may be called a town for its largeness : it has two cloysters for the processions ; the first is upon arches of brick ; and the second, which is the largest, very finely painted, with the story of the life of the saint compared with passages of our saviour Jesus Christ's life ; and over, are all the saints of the order ; and at each corner four great pictures, with four altars, which serve for the processions and ceremonies of holidays.

The church is of free-stone, and all its altars gilded on the inside ; but above all, the seats of the choir are a piece of rare workmanship : it is all of cypress, by which means there is always an admirable smell. The first row of seats reaches, with its crowning or ornaments, to the very roof, all of excellent architecture, with its mouldings, bases, cornishes, and other proportions.

The church of our lady of the *Mercede*, is also built upon brick arches. The great chapel is admirable for the thickness of its wall, and the beauty of ceiling, which is all of cypress wood, in the form of a *duomo*, or *cupola*. The great cloyster is begun upon so fine a model, that to finish it so, will require the care and application of those who have the government of that convent. The situation of this convent is the finest and noblest of any, except that of *St. Francis* : it has the advantage of receiving the river first, whereby water is so plentiful in the convent, that they have been able to make two mills to grind corn enough for the convent, and to give away.

The convent of *St. Augustin* is but newly begun ; but its church, all of free-stone, will out-do all the others for beauty : it is of three isles, and in the midst of all the hurry and business of the town.

'Tis not many years that the sacred order of the blessed *Juan de Dios* has been settled in this kingdom ; and in a little time those fathers have done a great deal ; for having taken upon them the care of the royal hospitals, they have reformed them, assisting the sick with all neatness, care, and diligence, and have added several large buildings. They are much helped in this by the devotion the people have for their founder, to whom they address their prayers and vows in their wants and necessities, and not in vain, for they feel great relief by his intercession.

The college of the company of *Jesus* has not been able to build the inside of the house, because from their first foundation the fathers have attended only the finishing of the church ; which is now compassed, and is without dispute the finest next to the ca-

thedral. It is all of a white stone, the front of an excellent architecture, and over the cornish a figure in *relievo* of a *Jesus*. The great chapel has its cupola and lantern all adorn'd with festoons and knots of two sorts of wood, white and red, which makes a beautiful shew.

The covering or roof is all of cypress, inlaid with all sorts of flower-work, and divided into five parts ; the middlemost is a compofure of all sorts of figures, which seem a labyrinth to those who see it from the ground, and with a noble cornish that runs round, gives a delightful prospect.

The architecture of the altar, and the tabernacle for keeping the holy sacrament, are valued at a prodigious sum. The altar rises to the top of the church ; and because, according to art, it ought to have reached from wall to wall, which it does not, the empty places are filled up with two reliquaries on each side, which join to the altar : this being all gilded, seems, when one first comes in, to be one plate of gold.

C H A P. IV.

Of the Civil Government, both ecclesiastical and secular, of the City of St. Jago ; and of the Nature and Properties of its Inhabitants.

Government of St. Jago.

GOVERNMENT is the soul of the body-politick ; and therefore, at the same time that the city of *St. Jago* was founded, the corporation was settled to administer justice, without which no government can stand. The corporation consists of two ordinary alcaldes, an alferes royal, an alguazil mayor, a general depositarius, six counsellors, or aldermen, chosen every year, half out of the gentlemen called *encomenderos*, and half out of the inhabitants of the place, who have bought that privilege for themselves and their descendants. Of the two alcaldes, he that is of the *encomenderos* has the precedence and first vote, and the inhabitant the other : they divide the year between them by six months. There is a president to the assembly, who is always *corregidor*, and lieutenant to the captain-general ; and it is a place of great honour : and though it be of more charge than profit, by reason of the expence belonging to it unavoidable, yet it never fails of pretenders, because of its authority, and the respect paid to the office. They are chosen yearly, with the two alcaldes, two others of the holy fraternity, or *hermandad*, whose jurisdiction is without the bounds of the city, as is practised in other parts. About thirty years ago there was founded a royal chancery in this city, which consists of a president, four

The court of the royal audiencia.

oydores, or counsellors, and two fiscals ; one who is the ordinary, and another, who has been added within these four years, and has the same honours, who has the protection of the *Indians*, and the matters belonging to the holy cruzada. After these is the alguazil mayor de corte, who has also the magistrate's habit, and a chair of state : then are the officers called the chancellor, secretaries, referendaries, and others, as in such courts. There is no appeal from the sentence of review given in this court, but to the royal council of the *Indies* ; and then there is a certain sum, below which there is no appeal neither. It cannot be denied but the majesty of this tribunal has very much adorned the city ; though there want not those who lament the hindrance it has given to its riches and increase, which would have been more considerable, if the inhabitants had continued in their first simplicity, cloathing themselves with the manufactures of the country, and avoiding all those pompous liveries which are now in use ; for those who before might walk in the publick place in a plain dress of the country, and be honoured and respected, must now appear in silk, or *Spanish* cloth, which yet is dearer than silk, for a yard of it costs sometimes twenty pieces of eight. Any gentleman of estate cannot now appear decently in publick, without many servants

1646. **OVALLE** in rich liveries ; and within a few years they have brought up a vanity of rich parasols, or umbrellas, which at first were only used by the people of the greatest quality ; and now no body is without them, but those who cannot compass them ; and though it is a thing of great gravity, and very useful to preserve health, yet it increases those forced expences used in great cities : for this, and some other reasons, some were of opinion, that it would have been better for the city and kingdom, that they had continued to govern themselves without this court of a *royal audiencia*, as they did formerly : but, to say truth, they are in the wrong ; for, first, there are many cities in the *Indies*, where, without a court of this nature, I have seen vanity thrive in liveries and superfluous expences as much as any where. Secondly, because, abstracting from passion and interest, which commonly do mislead men in the administration of justice, it cannot be denied but that the sovereign authority of this tribunal is of great weight to maintain the quiet of the kingdom, by keeping an even hand in the administration of justice, and not suffering that the tyranny some affect, either by reason of their preferments or riches, should stifle right reason, or oppress innocence, which has not learn'd to court and flatter.

The audiencia of great advantage to the city. Thus a *royal audiencia* is a bridle to vice, a reward to virtue, a protection to the poor, and a maintenance of right and reason ; and this was the intention of our catholic monarch : for this reason did he erect this court, which is the more necessary, because it is at that distance from the royal presence, and so hard that the cries of the poor should reach his ears ; for if sometimes they do arrive to his court, 'tis so faintly, that they can scarce be heard : for this reason, those who have the chusing and sending the king's officers into such remote parts, ought to be the more careful to provide men of christian principles, and well intentioned, as indeed they have been, and are still in that kingdom ; and it is no more than is necessary, for a good example to those new christians the *Indians*.

This *royal audiencia* is the cause likewise, that much gentry comes from *Europe* to the *Indies*, and so help to people them, and to continue the good intercourse between *Spain* and that country, which is good for both. It cannot likewise be denied, (though that be but as an accessory,) that the presence and assistance of this royal tribunal at all publick feasts and exercises, is of great countenance to them, and particularly to the literary acts and commencements, whereby learning is encouraged ; and those who employ themselves in that honourable study

have a reward before their eyes, hoping to attain to be advocates, referendaries, fiscals, and counsellors : for in the *West Indies* those places are all very honourable, and particularly in *Chile*, where the salaries are larger than in other parts, and yet provisions are cheaper ; so that 'tis easy to lay up a good part of one's revenue. Besides these tribunals, there are others, as that of the chamber of accounts, or treasury, for the management and administration of the king's revenue : these officers do likewise visit the ships that come in and out at the port of *Valpariso* : their offices are very honourable, and of great profit, and they are in the king's gift, as those of the *royal audiencia* are.

The affairs of justice, and things belonging to good government, are under the *audiencia* ; but those of war and preferments belong to the governor, of whom we shall speak in a proper place.

The bishop is absolute lord of all the church government ; and though the bishoprick of *St. Jago* is none of the richest of the *Indies*, because all the product of the earth is so cheap, and by consequence the tithes do not rise high, yet this very abundance is part of the riches of the bishoprick ; for by this means the bishop's family and expences are the easier supplied, and he may keep more attendance, and yet lay up a good part of his revenue ; whereas other bishopricks, though richer, have enough to do to keep up the decency of their dignity. There is a numerous clergy, who make a great *cortege* to the bishop upon certain publick days ; and when he is received the first time, and takes possession, the ceremony is very great ; for part of the *royal audiencia*, the chapters, all the militia, horse and foot, with the people, go out to meet him ; so that 'tis a day of great pomp.

The chapter of the cathedral is a venerable body of men, in which the king alone provides the vacancies by virtue of his royal patronage, and the concession of the popes ; so that there is not, as in *Spain*, the bishop or the pope's month ; but in the *Indies* all dignities of cathedrals, even to the very parish priests, are all at the king's nomination, but with some differences ; for the dignities are bestowed in *Spain* itself by the advice of the council of the *Indies* ; but the cures or livings of parish priests, the king does bestow them by his governor or president, who exposes a publick edict, that all opposers for the vacancy of such a benefice may come and oppose the examination ; and of these, the bishop presents three to the governor-general, to chuse in the king's name.

The holy tribunal of the inquisition, which is in *Lima*, serves for all the whole south

*The bishop
supream in
all ecclesiastical
affairs.*

*Chapter
chosen by
the king.*

south *America* ; so that in *Chile* there is only a commissary, with his officers and familiars, who accompany him in all publick acts, and form a tribunal with great authority. There is likewise an officer of the *Cruzada*, called a commissary, which is likewise a post of great authority ; and the day that the bull is published, all the orders of the religious are bound to be at the procession.

Character
of the na-
tives.

Let us conclude this chapter by saying something of the natives who are born and bred in this city : They are generally ingenious, and of good parts ; and those whose inclination is to learning, succeed very well ; but they naturally are more inclined to war, very few of them taking to other employments, either of trade or business ; and they who, from their infancy, or by a strong inclination, do not take to learning, seldom succeed, and easily leave it, if put upon it, to follow the sound of a drum or a trumpet, and never are quiet till they get to be enrolled as soldiers being much better pleased with the liberty of a

foldier's life, than with the discipline of the schools.

OVALLE.
1646.

They are much addicted to horsemanship : and I have often seen, that to strengthen a child that can hardly go, the best way is to set him on horseback : this makes them prove dexterous horsemen, and bold. And 'tis a common opinion, and a known experience, that for horse, one of the country is better than four from abroad : this has been sufficiently proved in the course of so long a war as that which has busied that kingdom.

They are naturally liberal, good natured, and friendly, particularly if they are treated honourably, with due regard : they are pretty stubborn and wilful ; to be led only by fair means, and then they are docile and tractable ; but if force is used, they do worse and worse. This we the fathers of the society do often experience in our colleges : so we are obliged to lead them by sweetness and emulation, rather than by rigour and harshness.

C H A P. V.

Of the Riches, Militia, Studies, and Increase of the City of St. Jago.

THIS city, to which the king has given the title of most noble and loyal, is the capital city of *Chile*, and one of the best in the *Indies*, next to those two royal ones of *Lima* and *Mexico*, who do exceed it in sumptuous edifices, in people and trade, because they are more antient and nearer *Spain*, and of a greater passage for the people that come from *Europe*, and free from the tumults of war ; which is a canker that eats deepest into great cities and kingdoms ; and 'tis no small proof of their force, to be able to maintain so long a war.

Foundation
of the city.

This city was founded one hundred and four years ago ; and it has all that while sustained the heavy load of a long and stubborn war, which the native *Indians* have made upon the *Spaniards* without any intermission ; in which its inhabitants have either always been in arms, or sending many horses and provision to the camp ; a calamity, which, far from letting it grow to what it is, ought to have kept it down from the beginning : nor is it of a small consideration, for the growth of other cities in the *Indies* to reflect, that they being in the way, and, as it were, upon the passage of other places, many newcomers have settled there, who perhaps at first were bound for other countries, or at least were indifferent where they stay'd, and took up with them. 'Tis otherwise with the city of *St. Jago*, because the kingdom of *Chile* being so remote, and the last of all the *Spanish* dominions, it is the *non-plus-ultra* of the

world ; so that no body goes thither by chance, but on purpose, and upon some design or particular interest ; for which reason the number of strangers is little.

But the city is so good and convenient to pass away life with ease, that notwithstanding these disadvantages, it is so increased, that it astonishes all who see it, few cities of the *Indies* outdoing it in finery, particularly as to the women, (it were to be wished it were not to that excess ;) for all things coming from *Europe* are there prodigious dear ; and this causes many families to run behind hand. Who should see the place of *St. Jago*, and that of *Madrid*, could see no difference as to this point, nay, as to the women, the finery exceeds that of *Madrid* ; for the *Spanish* women, scornng to go to service, are all ladies, and love to appear as such, as much as they can ; and the emulation between them about fine cloaths, jewels, and other ornaments, for themselves and their servants, is such, that let their husbands be never so rich they want all they have, particularly if they are of the nobility, to satisfy the pride of the women.

As to the militia of the city, the first part of it is the company of inhabitants, encomenderos, and reformed captains, who have no other commander but the governor himself, or his deputy ; after that, there are two or three troops of horse, and three or four companies of foot, all *Spaniards*. These often muster on holidays, and are exercised in the use of their arms ; and sometimes there

1646. *W* OVALLE. there are general musters before the oydores and royal officers, where their arms are examin'd; who also note them down, to know what strength they can raise upon occasion, punishing such as do not keep their arms and horses fit for service. By this diligence they are very ready at their arms, and the exercising of them proves an entertainment for them and the whole city; for very often, in the publick processions, one or two of these companies use to come out, and make a salvo for them; and in the holy week there always attend a troop of horse, and a company of foot, who guard the street, where the processions of the whippers go to keep the peace, because of the *Indians*, who use to take that time to make some risings, the *Spaniards* being wholly taken up with their devotions.

The days in which this militia makes the best shew, are, when the bishops come to be receiv'd, because they make a lane from the entrance of the city to the great place of it, where they form their battalion; and the concourse of the people uses to be so great, that though the place is very large, there is scarce room for them.

The vast increase of the city.

And since we are upon that subject, we cannot omit to observe that which is worthy of admiration, and that is, to see how it is increas'd in the number of *Spaniards* within these forty years. 'Tis probable, the same has happened to the other cities of the *Indies*; but this has had a continual drain, by supplying soldiers for the war with the *Indians*, where many perish, and few return. I remember that I have heard say, that one of our fathers, newly come from *Europe*, and coming to our college, where he saw but few people in the street, cried out,

Apparent rari nantes in gurgite vasto.

By which he meant to signify, the disproportion of the inhabitants to the bigness of the city; but now that very street is so full of people, that all hours of the day, and some of the night, it is extremely frequented; for there have been built many houses for handicraftsmen and shopkeepers on both sides of it, because trade is considerably increas'd.

I can myself affirm, that I observ'd as great an alteration in a much less time, as well in people as in building; for having been absent but eight years, I confess, that at my return, I scarce knew the place again; for I found several ground spots where there was not a house built upon, with very good buildings; and those which I had left built were alter'd to the better, with more and higher apartments; and the courts which were very large, were considerably streigh-

tened by other buildings; and yet the plot of the city was larger too; so that being at first built at the foot of the mountain we have spoken of, to the west of it, I found it extended as much to the east, and the same proportionably to the south and north, and it increases daily towards the river, and the *Cannada*.

There was, when I left the place, about *Increase of trade.* a dozen shops of good retailers, and at my return there were above fifty; and the same proportionably as to the shops of shoe-makers, taylor, carpenters, finishers, goldsmiths, and other handicraftsmen, whom I found also more curious and exact in their professions; and emulation has produced very good pieces of workmanship in gold and silver, and carvings in wood, gildings, paintings, which have adorn'd the churches, with those which have been brought from *Europe*, and the particular houses; so that in some houses alone, there are more things of that kind now, than there were in all the city formerly. Some complain, that there are not now such rich and powerful men as there were at first; and that is true: but it does not follow, that the generality is the worse for that, but rather otherwise; for the lands and houses which belong now to ten families, were antiently in one; it being certain, that several of the heirs of that man have attain'd to as great riches as he himself had; or at least 'tis apparent, that the stock of all those who have shar'd the inheritance, far exceeds what was left them; so that supposing, that some were formerly richer, yet the riches are more in the land; which is also clear to any that shall consider the houses, possessions, and other improvements made since that time; for now there is scarce room for the people, whereas before there was not half people for the room that was for them; which is also visible in the country round about, where farms that could hardly find purchasers, and were little worth, are now so risen in their value, that the smallest cost great sums; and this rage of purchasing is such, that most of the causes in the *royal audiencia* are about titles; for the antients, who took possession of the land, thought, that if they had a little footing in a valley, it was all theirs; but those who have come since, have purchased by virtue of new titles, and taken new possession; which makes so many law-suits.

There is not a form'd regular university in this city, because that of *Lima* serv'd for all the neighbouring kingdoms and provinces to take the degrees; but when in time the going to *Lima* was found so chargeable, and the journey, which is of three or four hundred leagues, so troublesome, there were bulls obtain'd of the pope, for the

The pope's bulls obtain'd for the dominicans and jesuits to confer degrees. the orders of *St. Dominick* and the *jesuits*, to have the privilege of conferring the degrees of bachelor, licentiate of arts, as also doctors in divinity, in the kingdoms of *Chile*, *Granada*, *Ruito*, *Chuquizaga*, *Tucuman*, and *Paraguay*.

The effect has shew'd how necessary this favour, and how important this privilege has been; for this incitement to honour has caus'd a general application to learning; for the priests and curates are already great proficient in study, and so more capable of taking upon them the cure of souls; and those who betake themselves to a religious life, are better qualified to serve their orders, and be an honour to them, as many of them are; and it does not a little contribute to the value of them, to see the great solemnity us'd at the reception of the several graduates. And in this, as well as the rest, I think our city of *St. Jago* is not inferior to any: for, first, all the acts are held with great concourse of all the learned, and very often the bishop honours them with his presence, and so do the president of the *audiencia*, and the chief of the town-government, to whom are dedicated

the subjects of the extempory readings, according to the constitution of the university, which are given out with great fidelity, dividing the subject into three parts, for the graduate to dispute upon in presence of a great concourse of people; and the severity is indispensable in this and all other examinations, for the different degrees which are given by the bishop, by virtue of an approbation first given him by the father rector and the professors, as the bull directs; according to which there is no obligation of giving any treat; but yet that the doctors may assist with more pleasure and diligence, there has been introduced a custom of giving some moderate ones, besides gloves, which were allowed instead of it; but some out of ostentation, give both treat and gloves. Besides this, there has been introduc'd a custom of inviting the horse of the city to honour the procession, which makes the solemnity the more conspicuous; and they very willingly accept of the invitation, for they are very ready to mount on horseback to honour any, much more those who distinguish themselves by the exercises of virtue and learning.

OVALLE.
1646.

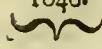
C H A P. VI.

Of the Worship of God, and the Church Ceremonies in the City of St. Jago.

Religious worship every stately and expensive.

IF we were to make a judgment of this city by the worship of God that is perform'd in it, and the appearance of the clergy, we should judge it to be much bigger than it is; for the state and expence with which the holidays are kept, in the charge of musick, perfumes, wax, and other ornaments, are very great: let us give some particular instances, and begin with the cathedral. I cannot but commend the piety of those eminent persons, the bishop, president, and counsellors of the *royal audiencia*, who taking each of them a day during the octave of the holy sacrament, are at the whole expence of that day, and that is very considerable; for all the wax and perfumes are very dear, as coming from *Europe*; and the holy emulation that is between them, increases the splendor of the day; so that during that octave, the church is so perfum'd, that its fragrancy is smelt some distance from it. The procession of the first and eighth day are upon the account of the chapter, as the hanging of the streets, and erecting of altars for repositories, are at the charge of the inhabitants where the procession passes: this procession is attended by all the convents, and all the companies of trades, with their banners and flags, so that it reaches a great way. After this of the cathedral come every day

new ones of all the convents, so that they last a month, every one endeavouring to have theirs the best; by which means there are great variety of ornamental inventions and machines. The *Indians* of the neighbourhood, that live in the *Chagras*, that is, little cottages, within some miles of the city, attend likewise with their banners; and they chuse for this purpose a leader who makes the expence, and treats those of his company: their numbers are so great, and the noise they make so loud, with their flutes, and their hollowing and singing, that they are placed in the front, or else there would be no hearing the church musick, nor any means of understanding one another about the government of the procession. The other feasts and holidays in the year are proportionably solemniz'd with the same decency by all the orders of friers, who all of them have some devout persons who help to bear the charge. But the nuns exceed all the rest in ornaments; and these nunneries are so populous, that in that of *St. Austin* alone there are above five hundred persons, whereof three hundred are veiled nuns, the rest are lay-sisters; and because the nunnery being full, there can be no more receiv'd, but with great difficulty, the other nunnery of *Sancta Clara* receives so many every day, that in a little time it

1646.  OVALLE. will equal the other in number, as it does already in the pomp and ornament of its church-service; that which these angels of heaven, (for so we may justly call those who with so much piety and anxiety do serve God continually, and are as a wall of defence to the city,) that which they do most shine in, can hardly be express'd as to the neatness, curiosity, and richness of their altars, and the church-ornaments. What shall I say of the finells, artificial flowers, fruits, chocolates, pastillos, and perfuming pots, which I have seen sometimes of so great a size, that they struck me with admiration, considering the matter they are made of, which is of a refin'd sugar, as white as snow, sometimes in form of a castle, sometimes of a candlestick, or a pyramid most exquisitely wrought.

They are not content with this; for I have sometimes seen the whole grate of the choir, and the joiners work, and beams of the church, all cover'd with preserv'd citron, in form of suns or angels of *mezzo rilievo*, and a thousand other inventions, which I should never have done, if I should report them all. I must only say, that the

generosity of those ladies is such, that though this costs very much, yet I have often seen them at the end of a mass distribute all those things to those who happen to be in the church, without keeping it for themselves: they do not only do this within the church, but the altars which are set up in their cloysters, and streets near them; for the processions are adorn'd, after the same manner, with fruits and flowers of the same materials, so well imitated, that they appear new-gather'd.

The monasteries of men are not so well fill'd as those of the nuns, though some have a hundred, others sixty or seventy friers. The secular clergy is also very numerous, very virtuous, and learned. Since I came away, there has been founded another nunnery of about thirty nuns, who will need no portion, being provided for by a gentleman who left all his estate to that foundation; it was captain *Alonso del Campo Lantadilla*, alguazil mayor of that city, which will be of great service to help the providing for poor maids, who, perhaps, else would not find it easy any other way.

CHAP. VII.

In which is treated of the Processions of the Holy Week in the City of St. Jago.

LET us conclude this matter of religion and pious exercises with saying something of the most remarkable practice of it in the holy week, by the stateliness of the processions at that time; which is such, that all strangers confess, that if they had not seen it, they should hardly have believ'd it. These processions begin on the *tuesday* in the holy week, to which the company of the *Morenos*, which is founded in our college, give a beginning, (of which we shall speak more when we treat of its employments, as also of the brotherhood or confrary of *Indians*, on the morning of *Easter-day*.) The procession that follows next, is that which comes out of the convent of *St. Austin*, in which is founded the confrary of the *Mulattos*: they go all cover'd with black frocks, and have many passages of the passion sung very devoutly, with the best musick of the place, and many lighted torches. The *Wednesday* the famous procession of the confrary of the *Nazarenos* sets out, which is all of natural *Spaniards*, of several arts and professions, and is founded in the royal convent of *Nuestra Sennora de la Mercede*; and it is one of the richest and most adorn'd processions. This procession is divided into three troops: the first of which carries *La Veronica* to the cathedral, where it stays to

meet the second, in which comes the *Redeemer* with his cross, so heavy, that he is forced to kneel often.

When this second, which is the largest, comes to the great place, that which stay'd at the cathedral goes to meet them; and at a certain distance, in sight of a vast multitude of people, the *Veronica* comes, and kneeling down to the image of Christ, which is a very large one, seemingly wipes his face, and then shews the people the representation of it remaining in the handkerchief; and then as they begin to march, there appears the third procession, in which comes *St. John*, shewing the *Virgin Mary* that dolorous spectacle: so that by all these there is form'd a mighty procession, with many lighted torches, and all the brothers are cloathed in their red frocks, marching with great silence and devotion. There is another representation of great piety, which is perform'd in the convent of *St. Francis*, and in this convent; which is the parting of Christ and his mother, which uses to cause great passion and many tears, because of the naturalness with which it is acted.

On the *Thursday* there are very curious sepulchres erected, and many alms given to the poor; and though in the foregoing processions, and on the *Fridays* in *Lent*, there are to be seen some people whipping themselves, with

The stateliness of the processions.

The monasteries of men not so populous as the nunneries.

with divers sorts of penances, which every one performs according to his own devotion, yet the processions, which by excellency are called the bloody processions, are performed this night. One of them sets out from the chapel of the true cross, which is in the convent and chapel of *Nuestra Sennora dela Mercede*, and is only of the inhabitants and gentlemen, who go all covered over with black frocks; and he who carries the cross is obliged (besides the collation which he provides for the preacher and the musick, and which uses to be very magnificent) to provide also men to attend the procession, and relieve the whippers, who often draw so much blood that they faint away; and others take care to cut off of the disciplines some of the spurs of them, for they use to have so many on, that they almost kill themselves, nay, I have seen some of so indiscreet a zeal, that they used certain buttons with points so sharp, that if they were let alone, 'tis a dispute whether they would not die before the end of the procession. Before this go also two others, both of them bloody processions; one of the *Indians*, and it is that has most whippers; the other comes from *St. Domingo*, and is of the *Morenos*: they both have musick; and the communities of all the convents go to meet them when they come near their churches with torches in their hands. They spend a great deal of time in their procession, and are accompanied by an infinite number of people.

On the holy *friday* there are two processions more that go out of *St. Domingo* and *St. Francisco*, both of natural *Spaniards*. That of *Sancto Domingo* is called the procession of pity, and has been begun but lately; but it has made such progress, that it equals the most ancient: they carry all the marks of the passion by so many dress'd up like angels very richly, and each of them is attended by two brothers of the procession with lights, and their coats of yellow. The other procession, which comes from *St. Francisco*, is the antientest, and has always been the best: it is mightily commended for the great silence and devotion with which it is performed; for there is not a word spoke in it from its going out to its returning. Before it goes there is performed the descent of the cross before a great concourse of people. This has always been an action of great piety, and very moving. The ensigns, or marks of the passion, go out in order; and when they come, there is another representation very tenderly made in the *Cannada*: there is a great cross set up; and when the image

of the virgin comes up to it, it lifts up its eyes, as one who misses the sovereign good that hung on it, and drawing out a white handkerchief applies it to the eyes, as crying, and then opening the arms, embraces the cross, and kneeling kisses the foot of it once or twice: all this it does so dexterously, and becomingly, that one would swear it were a living creature: and this action being accompanied with the musick of the day proportioned to the grief of the mystery, 'tis incredible what effects it has upon the people, who crowd one upon another to see it.

On the *Saturday*, and on *Easter-day* in the morning, there are other processions. The first comes out of *St. Domingo*, and is of the gentlemen and citizens, who in this are cloathed in white, of most rich cloth of silver or silk, finely garnished with jewels and chains of gold. The ceremony of the resurrection is celebrated by night in the cloyster; and for that end there is such an illumination, that it seems day. The procession goes out very noble and gay, and in it are many lights, musick, and dances, the streets being all adorned with triumphal arches, and hung with tapestries; and while this procession is in the cathedral, celebrating the mass, and communicating the host to the brothers, there comes another to the great place to meet it, another from the college of the jesuits, which is a confrary of *Indians*, the most ancient of the city, consisting of a company of *Indians* of both sexes, who, with torches in their hands, accompany the child *Jesus* dress'd up after the *indian* fashion, (which causes great concern and devotion:) they have also many colours, ensigns, and other ornaments, very rich and gay. At the same time two other processions of *Indians* likewise set out from the convents of *St. Francis*, and *Nuestra Sennora de la Mercede*, and another of *Morenos* from *St. Domingo*, all with a great apparatus of drums, trumpets, colours, hautboys, dances, which make that morning appear very gay and merry; and that it may be so to our saviour resuscitated, they all communicate, and give a happy *Easter* to the divine majesty and all heaven, to which the earth can never pay a greater tribute than by the conversion of sinners, particularly of these new christians, whose ancestors adored but the other day their idols; and now they acknowledge, and kneel before the true God, and sit with him at his table, as grandees of his court; they, who not long before were slaves of the devil,

OVALLÉ.
1646.

OVALLE.

1646.

C H A P. VIII.

Of some other Holidays of the City of St. Jago.

ONE of the things in which the greatness of a city shews itself most, is, in its feast, holidays, and publick entertainments: we will touch a little on those of *St. Jago*; and, besides the secular ones of bull-feasts, running at the ring, *Juego de Cannas*, tournaments, illuminations, and other diversions in which this city shines, it is wonderful how well there are celebrated the publick rejoicings for the birth or marriage of their prince, in universal canonizations of saints, and in all other solemnities, but particularly those ordered by his majesty, as that was about thirty years ago, when his majesty, out of his great piety, ordered, in honour of the queen of angels, that the mystery of her holy immaculate conception should be celebrated in all his kingdoms, as well by the seculars, as by the churchmen; and the first indeed need no incitement in this matter, every one being ready to shew their acknowledgements to this sovereign queen of heaven, who has favoured more particularly the kingdom of *Chile* with her protection from the beginning.

Let us now say what the city of *St. Jago* did upon this occasion, that the affection with which the inhabitants correspond to what they owe to this illustrious queen of heaven may be manifested, and some proof given of what they can do on such occasions; and letting alone what was done by all the convents and monasteries, I come to other particulars, to which three poetical contests gave rise: these were published solemnly on horseback through the town, with the company of the town magistrates, and all the gentry, without exception. The first of these troops were defrayed by the cathedral, the second by the celebrated monastery of the conception, the third by the congregation of students founded in our college; and in all these there were prizes propos'd of great value for the poets; and those who obtained them, had them given to them with great solemnity; and there were several representations, with other diversions according to the custom of that country.

And since we are speaking of what happened in those holy feasts, let us not forget as remarkable a passage as any: the day which it fell to the lot of our college to celebrate its feast, the father provincial, who was to preach before mafs, felt himself mov'd with love and devotion to the favourite virgin, that in a fit of extraordinary

zeal he invited the people to come after dinner to the procession of our church, and to sing before the image of our lady that ballad which was in those days so famous, and begins:

*All the world in general
Says so, chosen queen of heaven,
That you are conceiv'd even
Without sin original.*

The auditory was much edified with the piety of the good father, but smiled at his proposal as impracticable; yet they all came at the hour, most out of curiosity to see the event of this novelty: they all took olive-branches in their hands, and began the procession while our fathers sung the stanzas. It was wonderful that the same spirit which moved the father to such an extraordinary invitation, moved also all the people to sing before the image of our lady, which they carried thus to the cathedral; out of which the clergy coming to meet, and singing the church-hymns, the noise of the others singing was so great, that the canons were forced to give over, and accompany the people in their stanzas, singing altogether like so many children. They looked one another in the face, admiring at what they were doing, being scarce able to believe; and if I my self had not seen it, knowing, as I do, the natural gravity of that people, I should not have believed it neither; but the inward force of devotion can do any thing, when the lord of hearts makes use of it to exalt the immaculate pureness of his mother.

The rejoicings and entertainments upon this occasion lasted many days; one of them fell to the lot of the congregation of natural *Spaniards* founded in our college, who made a very ingenious and costly masquerade, representing all the nations of the world, with their kings and princes all cloth'd after their own fashion, with their attendants, and last of all the pope, to whom each nation came, with its king, to desire his holiness to favour this mystery. The liveries were very costly, and there was a triumphal chariot, a great machine, in which was represented the church: but that which was most chargeable was the wax, which is very dear there; and this entertainment was given by night.

The other days were divided among the *Negroes* and *Indians* of all arts and professions, who having a pious emulation to each other, made many rare inventions; but the merchants carried the bell in a tournament

nament, which they perform'd in the great place, each adventurer coming either out of a sea, or a wood, or an enchanted castle, with his paper or challenge, acting their parts very well: they broke their lances, and receiv'd their prizes, which were things of great value. The gentlemen of the city crown'd the feast with their usual diversions of bull-feasts, running at the ring *Fuego de Cannas*, &c. There are generally about twenty or thirty horsemen to attack the bulls, and throw the *rejous* or lances at them, besides him who strikes the bull dead. The illuminations of torches, with which they use to run about all night, are also of great diversion; and upon this occasion they did it with rich liveries, and other chargeable expences, for the greater solemnity of the time.

The ordinary and annual rejoicings which are observ'd on *Midsummer*, on *St. John's-day*, *St. James's*, and the *Nativity of our Lady*, are also worth seeing, particularly on the day of *St. Jago*, who is the patron of the city; for then the royal ensign of the conquest, with the king's arms, and is accompanied by all the gentry, who are oblig'd to appear on that occasion, which they do very gloriously.

Marriages
and christenings celebrated with great pomp and expence.

There happen likewise some marriages or christenings of the people of best fashion, in which they make as good a shew as their estates will let them, and often above their abilities. In the bull-feasts, those who undertake them use to treat the *royal audiencia*, and other bodies corporate; but in marriages they are profuse, for the presents to the bride have been brought in fashion to be very rich, such as slaves, carpets, scrutores fill'd with gold and jewels, and other curiosities of great value. There is not less spent in treats and banquets, particularly of late years, that they have taken to counterfeiting natural fruits, and other things, which serve for the sideboard; so that after a man has given a treat of all sorts of birds and fishes, his entertainment is not gallant enough, if he does not add a desert of preserv'd citrons in all figures of love-knots, &c. and the other fruits imitated after nature: these they mingle on the cloth, with the figures of ewers, saltsellers, jars, salvers, dishes, spoons, forks, knives, all made of citron, cover'd with leaves of gold and silver; and the first thing the guests do, when they sit down, is to plunder the table of these, for there are real

ones of gold and silver for the banquet. OVALLE.

1646.

All this costs extreamly, because the sugar comes from *Peru*, and the manufacture of all these curiosities is very dear; many are the guests; and besides the wedding-dinner, the fathers give another the next day as sumptuous. This is what no body of fashion can help doing. I have heard formerly, that at first there were gentlemen, who, upon any of these publick rejoicings, would do it all at their own charges, giving them all liveries of velvet, at the running of the ring for example; and yet then velvet was twice as dear as it is now. But at present that is left off, though they make expences equivalent in collations, bonfires, and other contrivances of great shew; for upon these occasions they all think themselves rich enough, which is a great ruin to families, every one straining out of vanity to equal another, though the difference in riches be very great.

And now let us leave *St. Jago*, which has detain'd us more than ordinary, to satisfy the curiosity of those who are desirous to know the increase and progress of the cities and colonies of that new world, and how the christian customs and government have begun to flourish in it; and by this essay a judgment may be made of those settlements. I pass on to the particulars of the conquest of that kingdom, that I may afterwards give an account of the progress of the christian faith, and the great hopes there is of its greater propagation. And because some curious persons do desire to know some particulars of the colonies and settlements of that new world; and that it may be agreeable to the reader to know the form given by the first founders to their cities, I have thought convenient to give here the ground-plot of the city of *St. Jago*, with all its streets, houses, and publick place; with the names of the churches and convents, and the streets that answer them, they being the principal buildings of a christian commonwealth; by which it may be known how other towns and cities in those parts are contriv'd, for they most of them follow this plot or model. And because some judgment may be made of the buildings, I have likewise given the city in perspective, as it looks to those who come from the *Peru* side, and enter by the great street call'd the *Cannada*; though the cupola of the jesuits, and the tower of the convent of *St. Francis*, with other high buildings, are discern'd many leagues off.

OVALLE.

1646.

C H A P. IX.

The Governor Pedro de Valdivia pursues his Conquest. The Gold Mines are begun to be wrought. He sends Proofs of their Richness to Peru; from whence the General Juan Baptiste Pastene brings him the first Succours.

THE governor *Pedro de Valdivia* having founded the city of *St. Jago*, began to think of fortifying himself in that post, to defend himself against the fury of the *Indians*, with whom he was every day engag'd; and many men were lost on both sides, so that his men began to be uneasy, and talk of going back to *Peru*, as *Almagro* had done: for though they saw the richness of the country, yet it appear'd to them dearly bought, since they could not get any of it without running great hazards by the many engagements that they had with the enemy; so that they gave their lives for gone. The governor *Pedro de Valdivia* was not ignorant of the difficulty of his enterprize; but yet encourag'd by the hopes of success at last, he resolv'd rather to die than give it over; and being an experienced soldier, bred in the wars of *Europe*, he resolv'd to raise a fort for the defence of his men, being convinc'd of the bravery of the enemy he had to do with; and though he was inform'd of a general rising, which the *Indians* design'd, he sent seventy men to make an incursion towards the river of *Cachapoal*. The *Indians* taking the opportunity of the absence of these men, attack'd the fort, and had gain'd it if the *Spaniards* had not shewed incredible valour in the defence of it till the other men return'd; and by their assistance they repulsed the *Indians*, and remain'd conquerors.

The governor made good use of this advantage, both with the *Indians* and his own men; so that having quieted them, he began to work upon the mines of *Quillota*, which were of great fame: they prov'd so rich, and yielded such a quantity of gold, that he thought it advisable to make a fort there for the security of his men; but finding want of hands, by the losses he had had, he resolv'd to send to *Peru* for relief. This he put in execution, giving at the same time an account of the richness and fruitfulness of the country, to incite people; and because ocular testimony persuades more than what we only hear of, he trusted six men, whom he sent along with thirty others, to have a great deal of gold with them, causing besides the stirrups of their horses, and all that is employed of iron work about the bridles and saddles, to be made of massy gold, making the stirrups very great and large on purpose. But all this design was disappointed; for these men, who were

thus gilded like suns, were, when they came to the valley of *Copiapo*, fallen upon by the *Indians*, and all perish'd but two, who were *Pedro de Miranda*, and *Monroy*, officers, who got away by the help of their horses; but being pursued by the *Indians* through mountainous ways, and their horses tiring, they were taken by an *Indian* captain, call'd *Cateo*, who had a company of archers: they tied their hands behind them, and carried them to their cacique, who design'd to put them to death.

This cacique was married to the heiress of all this valley, (for their inheritances follow the women, for greater security of the right line,) and when these two were expecting nothing but the blow of death, it pleas'd God to inspire the cacica, or cacique's lady, with compassion; and so she went herself, and with her own hands untied theirs, commanding their wounds to be dress'd, and treating them with some of their drinks, which she herself presented to them, having drunk first herself, according to their custom, and bid them take courage, for they should not die. They seeing themselves brought, as it were, from death to life, threw themselves at her feet, and dedicated themselves to her as voluntary slaves, since by her favour they enjoyed a life which they gave for lost.

The captain, who had taken them, seeing his princess and sovereign shew them so much favour, came to them, and bid them be confident of their lives, for that their lady having commanded they should not be killed, there was not any one bold enough to look awry upon them: they were kept six months in this captivity; and though it was so gentle, by the kind usage they met with, yet the natural desire of liberty, and the hopes of returning to their friends, still worked with them.

Let no man think himself secure that has his enemy within his own doors, nor let him trust his prisoner, though yielded up to his discretion; for let him be us'd as well as can be, yet there is no happiness like being his own man, and enjoying his liberty. This thought continually took up the minds of these two captains, so they laid a plot how to make their escape. They had observ'd in the cacique a curiosity for horses, which were a creature so new in those *Indian* countries; they persuaded him to learn to ride, and manage a horse.

He

A demonstrative proof of the riches of Chile intended.

The design miscarries.

A wonderful preservation.

horse. He liked the proposal, and began to exercise himself in this genteel amusement, carrying with him nevertheless always his guard of archers, with an *Indian* before with a lance upon his shoulder, and another behind, with a naked sword in his hand, more out of grandeur than distrust; for he had no suspicion of their plot, which was, to take an opportunity when he rid out to fall upon him, and kill him, as they did; for captain *Monroy*, with an extraordinary intrepidity, without reflecting on the guard that attended him, attacked the *Cacique*, and captain *Miranda* the rest, with so much suddenness, that they made themselves masters of the lance and sword; and bestirring themselves courageously, they wounded and dismounted the *Cacique*; so that he died of his wounds in some months. Having gained their horses, they saved themselves upon them; and not being pursued in that disorder, they overcame all the difficulties of those solitudes, and arrived at *Peru* safe; where at that time they found the government in the hands of the *Licenciado Vaca de Castro*.

These two captains were gentlemen of great families; and to this day the *Mirandas* in *Chile* are of the flower of the nobility of that kingdom. As for the *Monroys*, they are so known in *Castile*, particularly about *Salamanca*, that it is needless to say more of them. They were very well received by his excellency, for the good news they brought of that discovery and conquest, of the pleasantness of the country, and richness of its mines; and upon this relation, as *Antonio de Herrera*, and other authors say, it was resolved to further this conquest, which seemed to be of such high importance, and to chuse out some fit person, and accompany him with soldiers, arms, ammunition, and cloathing for the soldiers, who were almost naked.

He chose for this employment captain *John Baptiste Pastene*, a gentleman of the most antient and illustrious house of *Pastenes* in *Genoa*; which family is at present extinct in that republick, and remains only in its records, where many of that name are in the books of the nobility, and among the greatest dignities of the state. This gentleman engaged in the conquest of the

new world by the same desire of glory which moved others, and to mend his fortune. He happened then to be in *Peru*, the viceroy took hold of the occasion to employ him for the king's service; which this gentleman accepted, and performed, going for *Chile*, where he arrived with the succours which that kingdom stood in so great need of.

This relief was received with great joy, as being in the beginning of the enterprize, and extremely wanted, the soldiers being much fatigued and weakened with the continual assaults of their enemies, without any other defence than their fort of *St. Jago*, where they had enough to do to shelter themselves from their valour and fierce attacks; but the arrival of these succours gave them new courage, and resolution to prosecute their enterprize. To undertake it with more regularity, and prevent what accidents might happen from the sea, the governor sent *Pastene* with the title of lieutenant-general in his own ship, to discover the coast as far as the *Streights of Magellan*, as he did; and it appears by the letters of their catholic majesties, *Philip II.* and his son *Philip III.* how agreeable this piece of service was to them. About this time the mines of *Quillota* being working with great profit, and *Don Gonçales de los Rios* being captain-governor of the work, the *Indians* brought him a full pot of great grains of gold, for a shew of a great deal which they said they had found in a certain place. There they had laid an ambuscade of several of their best men, to fall upon such as blinded with covetousness should go to seek this treasure. This happened accordingly, for they all run presently to the place; for there is no alarm never so warm, that rouzes better than this desire of growing rich at once did them: but they were much mistaken; for instead of gold, they met with the iron of their enemies lances, who killed them all but their captain and a *Negro*, who escaped by the swiftness of their horses: so the *Indians* remained victorious, and by the way of triumph, set fire to a frigate which the *Spaniards* had almost finished to keep up their correspondence with *Peru*.

C H A P. X.

The City of the Serena is peopled. John Baptiste Pastene goes for more Succours to Peru, from whence he returns to Chile; and with Valdivia and other captains, goes to help the Royal Army against Pisarro.

Valdivia
pursues his
conquest.

HERRERA says, that with this relief which *Valdivia* received, he pursued his conquest on the people called the *Promocoes*; and that he was met by several

Indians in the valley *Quilloema*, whom he overcame courageously, though with the loss of some horses; and at that time horses were a thousand crowns a-piece. Having discovered

An un-
grateful
return.

OVALLE.
1646.

His joyful
reception.

The Spaniards
drawn into
an ambus-
cade thro'
covetous-
ness.

OVALLE discovered large provinces, and being satisfied of the great number of inhabitants in them, he returned to *St. Jago*. 'Tis suppos'd the governor did all this in haste, since he return'd without making any fort or settlement: so it is probable he went this time only to discover, in order to form a force proportionable of an army: therefore the general *John Baptiste Pastene* being returned from discovering of the sea-coasts, he sent him back to *Peru* to endeavour to bring more succours, as he had done the first, and so form an army capable of enlarging his conquests upon such powerful enemies, as he found the natives of *Chile* to be. Judging therefore that it was not yet time to leave any thing behind him unfortified, he founded in the valley of *Coquimbo* the city generally call'd by that name, but by him call'd *La Serena*, to serve for a resting-place or scala for the people who came from *Peru* to *Chile*; for being in great want of such supplies, he did endeavour to facilitate by all means their passage, and draw as many people as possible to preserve his conquest; for acting otherwise would only be to have so much the more to lose; as indeed it happened, and shall be related in its due place.

The city of
La Serena,
or *Coquimbo*
founded
in the year
1544.

The city of *La Serena* was the second that was founded in *Chile* in the year 1544. in a very pleasant and fruitful valley, watered by a very fine river, not of the biggest, but of clear and admirable water, with which the fields are all so plentifully refresh'd, that their product is so various, that the inhabitants want almost nothing from abroad that is necessary for human life; for they have corn, wine, flesh, all sorts of other grain, and pulse-fruits, even more than in *St. Jago*; for besides all those of *Europe*, and those of *Chile*, they have two forts very extraordinary: The first is a fort of cucumbers, which are very sweet, and do not need paring, for the outside is a very thin skin, smooth, of a delicate colour between white and yellow, all streaked with a very fine purple; the other fruit is that which they call *Lucumas*, and is a fruit, as I remember, I have seen in *Peru*: it is a very wholesome well-tasted fruit, the stone is smooth, and of a purple colour. The oil of this place is absolutely the best in the whole kingdom, as clear and bright as one's eyes, and of a rare finell and taste: they make great quantities, so that they send a great deal abroad. They have great flocks of cattle, though not so many as about *St. Jago*, because it rains less, and so the pasturages are leaner.

Abounds in
rich metals.

But that which is most particular, and of greatest value in this country, is the great abundance of rich metals, as gold, copper, and lead; so that though they

have given over gathering of gold in all the other parts of *Chile*, because other products are of greater advantage, yet in this place they go on gathering it more or less, according as the winter is more or less rainy; for when it rains much, the mountains are dissolv'd, and the earth open'd, and so the gold is easier found. And the copper too that is melted down there, serves for all the kingdom, and *Peru* besides. The climate of this city is absolutely the most temperate of all the kingdom; because the winter, which in other parts is very sharp, particularly nearer the pole, is here so gentle, that it is hardly perceiv'd, it being within five or six degrees of the tropick, and being in the 29th degree of latitude, enjoys a moderate climate, the longest day being of fourteen hours, and is upon the 11th of *December*, as the shortest is on the 11th of *June*, and the night is of fourteen hours.

But the accidental situation of the city helps much towards the mildness of the climate: it is within two leagues of the sea, having a plain before it all covered with myrtles: it stands on a rising ground, having a prospect to the sea, which makes a beautiful bay, abounding in fish of all sorts; by which it is an excellent place to pass the lent in, fish being very cheap: but the good cheer is also as well out of *Lent*; for besides the mutton, which is excellent, and very nourishing, there is plenty of tame fowl, partridge, turkeys, and all sorts of wild fowl. This city begun to be inhabited by many noble families, the founders being men of the best quality that came to *Chile*; and their descendants have remain'd, and do maintain the lustre of their ancestors. The governor-general appoints the place of *Corregedor*, or mayor of the city; and it is one of the most profitable places that are, because of the mines which are wrought in its territory: but notwithstanding all these good qualities which we have mention'd, this city does not increase so fast as that of *St. Jago*; for this last may be compared to the clove-tree, which sucks to itself all the substance of the earth round about it, a thing which is proper enough to capital cities every where.

About this time the general *John Baptiste Pastene* arriv'd at *Peru* for a second supply of men, which *Pedro de Valdivia* desired of the viceroy, to carry on his conquest; but he found the whole country in confusion, caused by the stubborn disobedience of *Gonçalo Pizarro*, so that the government wanted relief itself, instead of being in a condition to relieve others. This was so true, that *Pastene* was forced to return to *Chile*, to bring a force from thence to join with the royal army. This resolution 'tis probable came to the knowledge of the tyrant

rant *Pizarro*; for he found means to seize his ship and his person by cunning. *Pastene*, though much press'd by *Pizarro* both by promises and threats to join with him, as very well knowing how much he might assist him as his friend, or injure him as his enemy, yet persever'd in his loyalty to the king, and found means to make his escape out of the hands of the tyrant, and to recover his ship too; which having new fitted with necessaries, he returned to *Chile*, to bring from thence some of the best officers to encourage the royal army, which was preparing to engage *Pizarro*, who on his side had such a force, that he had put to death the viceroy *Blasco Nunnes Vela*. In *Chile* they were waiting for his return, and the succours he should bring with him; but when they saw him without any, they were much troubled; for they found themselves oblig'd at least to suspend all their projects upon *Chile*, to go and relieve those upon whom their own preservation depended.

Valdivia
marches to
Peru to as-
sist the
king's
forces.

The governor *Pedro de Valdivia*, as soon as he heard what pass'd in *Peru*, resolv'd to go thither in person with some of his best officers and soldiers to join and help the king's forces. He left in *Chile* for his lieutenant captain *Francisco de Villagra*, a gentleman of great courage and good parts, that he might govern and preserve what we had already in that kingdom, it being impossible to do more, or make any further progress, till the times should alter, and he provide more forces. He got together what gold he could, and went aboard with his captains and soldiers in the same ship, un-

der the conduct of the same general *Pastene*. His arrival at *Peru* gave great courage to the king's forces, by reason of the gold and men which he brought, the valour and experience of which was so great, that in the battle they perform'd extraordinary things, being the chief cause of the victory obtain'd over *Pizarro* in the valley of *Quiraguana*. He himself was taken, and chastis'd with his guilty assistants as his folly deserved, and his disloyalty to his prince. The president of *Peru*, *Gasca*, always advis'd with the governor *Valdivia* in all his most important affairs, whom he made of his council, with six more, for the secretest affairs and of most importance, making great esteem of his prudence and experience, as well as of the valour of his companions.

This victory being obtain'd, the governor return'd to *Chile*, with a good succour of men and arms, and the same officers and soldiers who accompanied him to *Peru*, with which, and other succours which came afterwards, he was in a condition to pursue his enterprize vigorously, as we shall see hereafter. But all was little enough against the resistance of the *Indians*, who not only kept them from advancing, but for six years together, that their stubborn opposition lasted, they reduc'd the *Spaniards* to great extremities of nakedness and hunger; so that they were forc'd to eat herbs and roots, and rats and mice, and such things; and if the heart and courage of the governor *Valdivia* had not been invincible, it would have been impossible to have made the conquest.

OVALLE.
1646.

He is victorious, and returns to Chile with a supply.

C H A P. XI.

What happened in Chile during the Absence of the Governor Valdivia, and after his Return; and of the new Succours he receiv'd.

P*edro Sanches de Hoz* was a soldier, to whom the king was pleas'd to grant a patent for the discovery and conquest of certain lands, to begin from the jurisdiction of the marquis *Francis Pizarro*; and he pretending that part of the kingdom of *Chile* was in his grant, oppos'd the governor *Valdivia*, to whom *Pizarro* by a royal commission had given the conquest and government of *Chile*; but the marquis persuaded him to desist, and go along with *Valdivia* to *Chile*, recommending his person to the governor, to use him with regard, and give him a share in the best part of his conquest. *Valdivia* did so, bestowing on him the richest lands of the *Indians*; but the ambition of commanding is always very contentious, and subject to complain till it gets the upper hand. This appear'd in *Pedro Sanches de Hoz*, in the absence of the governor from *Chile*; for being vex'd that he was not left with the authority of lieutenant in his room,

VOL. III.

he plotted to take away the life of him who had it, which was *Francisco de Villagra*, who having notice of his designs, seiz'd upon *Pedro Sanches de Hoz*, and cut off his head, by which he assur'd his own; and *Valdivia* approv'd of the thing as well done, when he was inform'd of it; because he was a friend to justice, and because a competitor is never sorry to have his competitor remov'd.

About this time, the *Indians* of *Copiapo*, who had begun to imbrue their hands in the blood of the *Spaniards*, in pursuance of the revenge of their prince's death, whom the captains *Miranda* and *Monroy* had killed, as we have related in the ninth chapter, lay in wait, and surpriz'd *Juan Bon* with forty soldiers more of some companies which were coming from *Peru*, and marching through their country; these they put all to death. After their example the *Coquimbese* attack'd the soldiers and inhabitants of the city of *La Serena*, whom they kill'd without sparing.

The *Copians* revenge the death of their captain.

ring one, and set fire to the city, which they ruin'd utterly, not leaving one stone upon another.

Are over-
come by
captain
Francis
de Aguirre. All this being understood by the governor at his return from *Peru*, he sent captain *Francis de Aguirre* with a good force, to follow them to their retiring-place, where in several rencounters, in the valley of *Copiapo*, he overcame the *Indians*: all which was as much owing to his great valour as conduct, without which the force he had would have prov'd insufficient, (as *Herrera* observes.) He did the same in the valley of *Coquimbo*, and rebuilt the city of *La Serena*, in the place and situation where it now stands. For which reason he was look'd upon as the true founder of it; and his descendants, who are of the best nobility of the kingdom, have preserv'd that prerogative, and are the chiefest in that government, or rather the masters of it; for they are so numerous and so powerful, that they yield to none in reputation, and are accordingly respected by all.

Let us now treat of that which 'tis not reasonable to forget; which is, of those captains, who in those early times entered *Chile* with succours of men to help to conquer it, since it is just their memory should live for ever in those who enjoy the fruits of their labours, and are now masters of what they gain'd with their blood and sweat, and the loss of many lives, and danger of their own, which they expos'd in so many battles and encounters they had with the enemy. I am only sorry, that I cannot speak of them all, and describe in particular their good qualities and great merits, because I am in a place where I want memoirs and informations for such a work; but I will say what I can of their noble actions, as I find them recorded in other histories; though to say truth, that which they say about *Chile* is so little, that it is almost next to nothing. I am not surpriz'd at it, for it is a place much out of the way, and its conquerors were busier with their swords than with their pens; for their enemies press'd them continually with so much vigour, that they had but little of that leisure which histories and relations require.

A recital
of those
captains
who were
instrumental in the
conquest of
Chile.

We shall begin with the governor *Pedro de Valdivia*, who was the first that entered the kingdom with a force, as has been related; then that which general *Pastene* brought afterwards with arms and cloaths. The succours brought by captain *Monroy* prov'd of great importance; as *Herrera* says, it was of threescore men, which in those days was as much as six hundred now: these he had hir'd in *Peru*, being much assisted by the viceroy, who, upon the relations of *Monroy* and *Miranda*, was resolv'd to encourage the enterprize.

I am not certain, whether it was before this, or after, that arriv'd the succours so opportunely brought by captain *Christoval de Escobar Villaroel*; for I do not find it mention'd in any of the historians, which I have read here; but in *Chile* the memory of it is very fresh, and will never be forgot; not only for his coming in a time when they extremely wanted supplies, but also for that circumstance of this noble captain's having brought these succours upon his own charges, (and I think they were seventy men,) and made his way by land to *Chile*, either by the wilderness of *Aracama*, or by the *Cordillera*, either of which must cost a great sum of money, for it is above five hundred leagues.

This action alone was sufficient to shew the nobleness of this gentleman, if that of his family had not been so well known as it is in *Spain*; but he continued to give proofs of his zeal for the king's service, by serving in person, and employing also his son captain *Alonso de Escobar Villaroel*, whom he had brought with him from *Spain*, that they might both give an example to their posterity, as they have; not yielding to any, but have produc'd many noble persons, both in arms and other civil employments of the government.

When I reflect upon those I have known of the descendants of this famous head and conqueror, I find, that between sons, grandsons, and great grandsons, they come up to eighty seven; and if they had not been so many, there was enough to honour this family in the seven or eight sons of the general *Luis de las Cucuas*, grandsons of this gentleman, with whom he presented himself to the royal army, all arm'd cap-a-pee, in which they serv'd many years at their own charges; for in those days the inhabitants that were gentlemen, had no other reward but their loyalty, and the glory of serving their prince. *Antonio de Herrera* makes mention of another supply, of one hundred and eighty men, conducted by captain *Francisco Villagra*, who was afterwards governor of *Chile*, and to whom that kingdom owes a great deal of its being, for the hazards he ran, and the noble actions he perform'd in its conquest, as we shall see hereafter, and may be read in the general history, to which I appeal. The nobility of his family was always notorious, and the gentlemen of his name have shewed themselves worthy of it, in the great services they have and do perform every day for the king, worthy of all sorts of acknowledgment and reward.

After this, in the time of the viceroy *Don Antonio Hurtado de Mendoza*, his excellency, as *Herrera* says, sent captain *Don Martin de Avendano* by land, with good succours

cours of men, and three hundred and fifty mares and horses, which were of as much importance for the war as so many men. The descendants of this gentleman are still carrying on the lustre of his family, so known in *Salamanca* and other parts. I was acquainted with two brothers of that name, who alone might preserve and increase the reputation of their family; the one was colonel *Don Antonio de Avendano*, who was colonel of the regiment of *Arauco*, who signaliz'd himself at the head of that regiment in many rencounters with the enemy, and particularly in one, where our camp was defeated, and where to preserve the reputation he had gain'd in so many noble actions and eminent dangers, he chose to die, being wounded in a great many places, and almost cut in pieces by the furious enemy. The other was *Don Francisco de Avendano*, likewise colonel, and who came to *Spain*; where his majesty, in consideration of his own and his ancestors merit, honour'd him with the habit of *St. Jago*, and the government of *Tucuman*, where he died.

I do not mention those companies out of which, as they pass'd by *Copiapo*, forty were killed, with their leader *Juan Bon*; because *Herrera*, who speaks of this, does not say who was the captain of them. Perhaps there were also other commanders, who in those six years time entered into *Chile* with men; and I should be glad to be where I might have particular information of them, to do them at least that small honour of

putting their names in print, and giving some glory to actions which, perhaps, deserv'd to be grav'd in brass. OVALLE.
1646.

I do not likewise set down here, that famous supply of men brought by the second governor of *Chile*, *Don Garcia Hurtado de Mendoza*, marquis of *Cannete*, for this shall be spoke of in its proper place, after the death of the governor *Pedro de Valdivia*; and thus we shall conclude those who entered by the way of *Peru*. For though, since that time, there have been several supplies, and are every day still more, yet they have not been remarkable enough, as not having come at first, but after the settlements were made; and besides, it would carry me too far to report them all. But I shall add here those which have come from *Spain* by the way of *Buenos Ayres*, as well because they were the most numerous, some having been of five hundred or a thousand men, as having come in dangerous times, when the kingdom was ready to be lost, the enemy having, as it were, besieg'd it; and so 'tis just to preserve the memory of such famous benefactors, who have been, as it were, fathers of their country. This we shall perform at the end of this book, in a treatise by itself, where we will likewise put the pictures of all the governors of *Chile*, as well as may be, considering how long they have been dead, that their descendants may preserve the memory of men who seem to deserve eternity by their heroical actions.

C H A P. XII.

The Governor Pedro de Valdivia pursues his Conquest, and peoples the City call'd the Conception, where he had like to have been destroyed in a Battle.

Valdivia
pursues his
conquest.

THE governor *Pedro de Valdivia* seeing himself with a good force, and the greatness of his mind persuading him that he had wherewithal to put an end to his enterprize, *Herrera* says he sent to the other side of the *Cordillera*, from *St. Jago*, captain *Francisco Aguirre* with a good number of men, with which he pass'd those terrible mountains, and founded among the *Diaguitas* and *Juries*.

Herrera says no more; nor do I know any thing of those individual places and cities which he founded. The governor *Valdivia* on his side set out of *St. Jago* with a powerful army, and passing the furious rivers of *Maypo*, *Cachapoal*, *Tinguiritica*, *Peteroa*, *Teno*, and *Mataquito*, he conquer'd the *Promocaes*, a warlike people, who had resist'd *Almagro*, and before that had repuls'd an army of fifty thousand men, which the *Inga* sent against them when he endea-

vour'd to conquer *Chile*; but the good fortune and great valour of *Valdivia* and his men overcame that which seem'd invincible, though I am persuaded that it was not without blood: but I refer myself to the general history of *Chile*, which has describ'd the particular encounters and battles on both sides.

The army pass'd the deep river of *Maule*, and the wide *Itata*, and coming to that of *Audalien*, quarter'd by the sea-side; and for the conveniency of situation, he founded there the city of the *Conception* in the year 1550. But the natives astonish'd and enrag'd at this boldness of strangers to enter thus into the heart of their country, as if it were their own, call'd a general assembly, and with a numerous and brave army presented them battle so furiously, that our people began to wish they had not engag'd themselves so far. Much blood was shed on

The city of
the Con-
ception
founded in
the year

OVALLE. on both sides; and our army was in great
 1646. danger of being destroyed, till it pleas'd
 God, (who guides all things to his ends,) who was to reap the fruit of his victory over those gentiles, whom he had predestinated by the means of the gospel, which was to be preach'd to them in case the *Spaniards* were victorious, to make them so at last, and that very gloriously, the famous *Aynabillo*, chief head of the *Pencones*, remaining prisoner, after having behav'd himself with great bravery in the fight.

The situa-
 tion of it.

The situation of the city of the *Concep-
 tion* is on a plain where the sea makes a most beautiful bay, in form of a half-moon; and nature has provided a mole, by putting there a large island, behind which ships ride safe from the north wind. By land, towards the east, it is encompassed with some high hills, the sides of which are all planted with vines and other fruit-trees; so that which way soever one looks, the prospect terminates in beautiful plantations of trees, or rather a green semicircle, which rejoices the sight, and fortifies the city. From the north, there comes into it a small river, which comes down from the mountains, which we have already describ'd in the chapter of the rivers of *Cbile*. On the south side, another larger deeper river runs by it, and is call'd *Audalien*. Neither of these rivers do the kindness to the city which *Mapocho* does to *St. Jago*, that is, to come into the houses; but the want of this is supplied by excellent fountains of cristalline and delicate water, which rise very near the city, and are brought into it very plentifully, and which was carried to the publick place by the general *Don Diego Gonzales Montero*, he being corregidor of this city, and governing it with the same prudence and generosity, that he since govern'd that of *St. Jago*, in the same quality of corregidor and lieutenant-general.

Its latitude.

This city is in the latitude of thirty three degrees and five and forty minutes to the antartick pole; and for this reason, and because of the high land it stands upon, the air is so temperate, that the heats never are troublesome, nay, in the heat of summer 'tis necessary to have as many bed-cloaths as in winter, which is not at all severe, because it never snows there, though it rains extreamly. For the security of the city, there was erected a good fort for our people to retire to when press'd by the *Indians*, which often happened, and made them stand to their arms almost continually; for they, impatient of any yoke, were incessantly taken up with the thoughts and endeavours of driving them out of the country; and notwithstanding all the care that was taken, the city was lost at last, for the enemy over-powered us: but yet in length

of time it was built again, as we shall see; though still remaining a frontier to the enemy, it has not had such increase as *St. Jago*. But it gains ground, and has many rich inhabitants, who have enter'd upon a great vent of salt, flesh, and hides, which is one of the richest commodities of *Cbile*; and they have, besides, magazines of flower, with which they furnish the army: the wines too of those parts, are generally better than those of *St. Jago*, though they are lower cepts or vines; nay, the grapes ripen as they lie along on the ground, as it is in many parts in *Europe*: they have not that abundance of almonds, oil, oranges and lemons, pulse, and dried fruit, as in other parts of *Cbile*, their summer being shorter, and the sun having less force.

The *Spanish* children born here are of a *Character*
 very sweet nature, and docile; of good wits, *of its na-*
 and take to learning very well. The men
 are loyal, faithful keepers of their word, friendly, and such as for their friends will venture any thing to defend them in their honour or fortunes, even with the hazard of their own, and their lives too: they are very well dispos'd to virtue, having good inclinations; and those among them, who have taken to arms, have extremely signaliz'd themselves. They are bred in great simplicity, as being far from the corruption of the court, which generally improves the malice, and raises the libertinism of young people. The bishoprick of this city is a poor one, not being worth above two or three thousand pieces of eight a year, because, though the land is rich of itself, and that in which there are most mines, yet the *Decimes* or tenths are very small, because of those continual wars which this city has maintain'd from its beginning; for we may say, it has been nurs'd with blood, and grown up in arms, not having laid them down in ninety five years, which is no small evidence of the good qualities of its inhabitants, and what it may be henceforward, when this dead weight is taken off. Another cause of the small revenue of this bishoprick, is the loss of seven cities, some of them the richest of the kingdom, which all belong'd to its diocese.

In the year 1567. there was settled a high
 court of chancery, which remain'd till the
 year 1574. and afterwards it was remov'd
 to *St. Jago*, where it now is: and though
 its jurisdiction reaches as far as this city,
 there is little for it to do, because the go-
 vernors are generally present, to be nearer
 the garrisons, and countenance and assist the
 war, of which there is a continual necessity.
 The garrison is very numerous, and of
 choice soldiers, where every day they mount
 the guard, as it is practis'd in places of
 war. The general provides all the officers,
 even

even to the colonels; but his majesty names the treasurer and muster-master-general, who is the second person after the governor: this is a post of great esteem, and no small value in this kingdom; and there

go through his hands three hundred thousand ducats of the king's money, which every year is to be distributed among the officers and soldiers, who are enroll'd in his books.

OVALLE.
1646.

Here are three chapters, which follow, all of miracles, wrought by an image of our lady, which are omitted.

C H A P. XIII.

The Governor Pedro de Valdivia prosecutes his Conquest, and founds the Cities of Imperial, Valdivia, and Villa Rica, and raises three Forts in Arauco.

1550. **T**HE governor *Valdivia* having spent the year 1550. in peopling the city of the *Conception*, and defending himself in his fort against the continual attacks of the enemy, and having at the same time inform'd himself more exactly of the country, and its fertility, by the means of captain *Hyeronimo de Alderete*, who had gone through it, and observ'd the number of its inhabitants, resolv'd to go out of the *Conception*, and pursue his conquest. In order to this, after having well provided his fort, and left a garrison in it, he set out in the beginning of the year 1551.

The foundation of the city of Imperial, and its situation.

He took his way with his army by the plains of *Angol*, crossing first the great river *Biobio*, and coming to that of *Cauten*, which for its gentleness is call'd the *Ladies River*, when join'd with another very pleasant one near the sea: here he found great settlements of *Indians*, and founded the city of *Imperial*. This is one of the most agreeable situations of the whole kingdom, being about three or four leagues from the sea, and thirty nine leagues from the *Conception*, and a hundred and nine from the city of *St. Jago*, in thirty nine degrees of south latitude. All the territory of this city is very fruitful, bearing corn, and all sorts of pulse and fruits, though the black grapes do not ripen so kindly as the white ones and the *muscadines*: the country is not all plains and valleys, nor all hills, but rather a composition of the whole; the hills are gentle and tractable, with good pasture and shelter for cattle; the ground does not want much watering, it having frequent and large dews that fertilize it. The city was situated upon a pretty stiff hill, and the confluence of two navigable rivers; but the port is not good, for the flats there are within three fathom and a half of depth. Here the governor met with fourscore thousand *Indians* settled, nay, some authors say, they were many more; and all agree that they were a quiet and good-natur'd people, not at all so warlike as the *Araucanos*.

This city was the head of the bishoprick, and it began to increase at first very much, by reason of the excellency of its soil and situation; and if it had not been destroyed;

VOL. III.

as we shall see hereafter that it was, it would by this time have been a great city; for it was already very well peopled, and must have increas'd, if the gold mines which are in its neighbourhood had been wrought.

This city, which was the fourth of this kingdom, being thus founded, the governor divided the territory, and gave the lordships to his conquerors, according to the royal privilege he had so to do, that he might engage the *Spaniards* to enter more heartily into his enterprize. He took for himself the lordships of *Arauco* and *Tucapel*, as far as *Puren*, except some manors that he gave to others, to content all. Having left a force, which seem'd sufficient in the city of *Imperial*, he marched as far as *Valdivia*. Being come to that famous river, and desiring to pass it, to conquer the land and people on the other side, the brave *Indian* lady, call'd *Recloma*, hinder'd him, offering to pass the river alone swimming, and to reduce the *Indians* to his obedience, as she did, and as we have already related in the ninth chapter of the first book; and there likewise is a full description of the situation of the city, and all its other qualities, which it was proper to make in that place, and so is not necessary to repeat here.

The governor having founded the city of *Valdivia*, erected a fort, and settled all things as he had done at the *Imperial*. While he stay'd there to pursue his settlement, he sent captain *Hyeronimo de Alderete* to discover the country as far as the *Cordillera Nevada*; and he having sent to the governor relations of his discoveries, as he went founded a town, which he call'd, by the excellency, *Villa Rica*, the appearances of the riches of that country being greater than any yet had been discover'd.

The city of Valdivia founded, and a fort erected.

The foundation and situation of Villa Rica.

Though the situation he chose seem'd at first to be the best, yet in time it was resolv'd to change it, and place it upon a great lake, at the bottom of the *Cordillera*, and about sixteen leagues from the *Imperial*, and forty from the *Conception*. It has not such a plenty of corn and wine as the others, but it has enough, and many other good qualities, which I omit, because it being since destroyed with other cities, already men-

K k tion'd,

OVALLE. tion'd, I am likewise forced to be silent of
 1646. their particular properties, and refer my
 self to the general history of *Chile*, which
 will embrace all those particulars.

These were the cities planted and peo-
 pled by the governor *Valdivia*; and though
 I have not, as to these last, made mention
 of the blood spilt in gaining them, 'tis not
 to be imagined but that they cost dear
 enough, since the contest was with such
 warlike nations, that it seem'd a great rash-
 ness (and would have been so without a par-
 ticular protection of heaven) to undertake
 such enterprizes. There are not wanting
 those who blame the governor *Valdivia*,
 judging that he did not measure well his
 strength, but grasped more than he could
 hold, as he found by a sad experience at
 his own peril in a little time.

The authors who speak of these at-
 tempts are full of the commendation of the
 valour, patience, and sufferings of the *Cas-
 tilians*; but all this would not have done,
 nor have subjected those people, nor twice
 that force could have prevail'd against them,
 if because they saw them on horseback, and
 killing people at a distance, they had not
 believed them to be *Epunamones*, by which
 name they called the gods they ador'd; so
 they imagined them to be immortal, and
 that they came from above with a power
 to send out thunderbolts like God: for ha-
 ving never seen either small arms, or great
 artillery, they thought the noise was thun-
 der; and to this day that sort of arms is
 call'd *Talca*, which in their language signi-
 fies thunder; and out of the same imagi-
 nation they call'd the Spaniards *Viracochas*,
 which is as much as to say, scum of the
 sea, or a people come by sea, giving to
 understand, that those men, if they were
 men, were sent from God to subject them.
 This made them ready at first to shew all
 respects to the Spaniards, and kept them
 from rebelling, and resisting so vigorously
 as they did afterwards, though they always
 made some opposition, particularly the
Araucanos, who have ever been the eagles
 among the *Indians*. *Valdivia* having well
 observ'd this, was content at present with
 what he had conquered, and returning to
Arauco by *Puren* and *Tucapel*, he caused
 three strong houses to be erected in the dis-
 tance of eight leagues from one another,
 and in such places as might have an easy
 communication together. Having thus set-
 tled matters, he return'd to the *Conception*,
 and so to *St. Jago*; from whence he dispat-
 ched captain *Hyeronimo de Aldarete* to *Cas-
 tille*, to give the king information of the
 riches that were discover'd in that country,
 and its other good qualities; as also a rela-
 tion of the settlements made there, in order
 to obtain a supply of people, which was

granted. The cities newly founded were in
 great danger of being lost; for indeed they
 were more than our forces could protect,
 and the *Indians* shewed great impatience,
 and fretted to see foreigners settle cities in
 their country, and erect forts and strong
 places for their security.

The governor being inform'd of this dis-
 position of the *Indians*, set out from *St. Ja-
 go* with a supply of men which he had re-
 ceived from *Peru*, under the conduct of
Don Martin de Avendano, and relieved all
 the garrisons: which having done, and pre-
 suming they were safe, without reflecting
 on the danger that threatened him, he ap-
 plied all his intention to give a beginning
 to the working of the gold mines for a
 design he had.

This was to go to *Spain*, and carry with
 him all the gold he could get together, to
 shew the king the vast riches of the coun-
 try, and to obtain from his majesty those
 titles of honour which were generally be-
 stowed upon the conquerors and discoverers
 of those *Indian* kingdoms, and so bring
 back a good force to subdue them. For
 this end he did two things; the first, to
 send to the *Streights of Magellan*, in the
 year 1552. *Francisco de Ulloa*, that with two
 ships, which were equipp'd on purpose, he
 might discover all the *Streight*, and give an
 account of it, that so he might know how
 to undertake the voyage to *Spain* that way:
 the other thing he did, was to set people to
 work to find out new gold mines, which
 they easily did, there being so many in
 these parts; among which, the most fa-
 mous were the mines of *Quilacoya*, four
 leagues from the city of the *Conception*; and
 others in *Angol*, to work which he employ-
 ed twenty thousand *Indians*. 'Tis easy to
 imagine how much gold such numbers of
 men might get from those mines, which
 had never been touch'd till then: it was ve-
 ry great, and enough to enrich both go-
 vernor and soldiers, which it did: and
 with the acquisition of so much treasure,
 they began likewise to despise their enemies;
 who, while they were busy in searching the
 bowels of the earth for gold, were employ-
 ed in thinking how they should recover
 their lost liberty, and free themselves from
 the yoke of subjection, which they had ne-
 ver felt before.

The city of the *Conception* went on prof-
 pering, because of the great quantity of
 gold brought into it every day; by which
 means the minds of the inhabitants were
 elevated in proportion, and the soldiers
 grew wanton and insolent. The governor
 being tainted with the same disease of too
 much prosperity, neglected to take notice of
 these disorders; for the desire of riches in-
 creasing by riches, which they saw every
 day

day fill their coffers, they were less attentive to that which ought most to have drawn their attention, which was their own and the kingdom's preservation, and so made way for that blow of fortune that laid them all along.

The Araucanos resolve to revolt.

The *Araucanos* were as uneasy, and continually plotting how to compass their designs, and at last resolved to rise unanimously against the *Spaniards*, and take their revenge of them. To try how it would be taken they began to talk big, and carry themselves haughtily, more like masters of

the land than like servants; they quarrell'd with one and the other, and losing all respect drove the thing so far as to kill some *Spaniards* in these contests; and then perceiving that these things were dissembled, and that their boldness had its desired effect, they grew every day more insolent: and at last being thoroughly satisfy'd that the *Spaniards* were neither gods, nor immortal, nor of any other species than they, but subject to all human infirmities, they began to fear them no longer, but resolved to fall upon them.

OVALLE.
1646.

C H A P. XIV.

The City of Angol is peopled, and the Indians rise against the Spaniards.

The city of Angol founded.

UPON occasion of the mines that were begun to be wrought in the district of *Angol*, the governor *Pedro de Valdivia* settled a city of that name there, which was also call'd the city of the confines. Some attribute this foundation to the marquis of *Cannete*, *Don Garcia Hurtado de Mendoza*, who governed after the death of *Pedro de Valdivia*: perhaps the reason of this is, that the situation of this city at first was three leagues from the place where it now stands; so it might be that *Valdivia* first settled it, and the marquis removed it to the place it is now in, and that was ground enough to make him the founder.

Its situation and description.

The present situation is in a plain, very large and difengaged, eight leagues from the *Cordillera*, and twenty from the *Concepcion*; some say sixteen, which perhaps is caus'd by the difference of its two situations. Their longest day and night are of fourteen hours and half. The land is very fertile; fruits ripen very well: there is good wine, and good store of raisins dried in the sun, figs, and other dried fruits; a vast quantity of tall cypresses, which yield a very sweet-scented wood, of which, *Herrera* says, there is made a gum-lac. The great river *Biobio* runs by it, and serves it for a wall and ditch on the south side; and on the north side another pleasant rivulet comes running from hills of a moderate height, and turns many mills for the use of the city. Those whom I have known that have been born in this city, have prov'd very gentle in their dispositions, of good wits, and noble inclinations, very friendly and real, and extremely loyal to the king, as indeed all the *Chilenians* are, looking on that as the highest *punto* of their gentility.

Character of the natives.

Now let us return to the *Araucanos*, who were busy in calling together their assemblies there, to treat how to cast off the yoke of servitude, and make themselves masters of that which was truly theirs. So it was, that the *Caciques* being possess'd with

an opinion that their forces were not inferior to the *Spaniards*, began to call them together: and they needed no incitements of pay or money; for the love of their liberty, and possessions, and posterity, was a sufficient spur to them, thinking every day a year that kept them from engaging with their enemies, and conquering them.

The *Caciques* that met were these: first, *Tucapel*, a great butcher of christians, with three thousand foldiers; *Angol*, who was very brave, with four thousand; *Cayocupil* with three thousand men, whom he brought from the *Cordillera*, as hardy as the rocks they came from, and made to endure any labour; *Millarapue*, an old man, of great wisdom, brought five thousand; *Paicavi* with three thousand; *Lemoleno* with six thousand; *Mareguano*, *Gualemo*, and *Leucopie*, each with three thousand; the robust *Elicuera*, held for one of the strongest men, with six thousand, and they ancient; and chief of all, *Colocolo*, with as many more. *Ongolmo* offer'd four thousand; and *Puren* six thousand; *Lincoyce*, who was of the stature of a giant, offered to bring more than any; *Peteguelen*, lord of the valley of *Arauco*, from whence the whole took their name, came with six thousand; and the famous *Caupolican*, and his two neighbours *Thome* and *Audalican*, and many others, kept themselves ready to come in with their subjects. They met, according to their custom, to eat and drink at the appointed *rendezvous*, for that never is omitted in these assemblies; and having been unanimous in the first and chief point, which was to rise, there was some difference about the choice of a general, every one desiring to have that command, as it generally happens in such elections: every one alledg'd their particular merits; the one his valour, another his experience, another his good fortune, and none seem'd to want a pretence for obtaining their desire. They grew warm in this ambitious contest, and would have come to blows, if the

old

1646. **OVALLE.** old and wise *Colocolo*, by his prudence and authority, had not quieted them, and reduc'd them to consent to choose *Caupolican*, not only as the bravest soldier, but the ablest chief. This done, they all swore obedience to him, and promis'd to obey his orders, for the better carrying on of their common design.

The *Spaniards* had, as we have already mentioned, three castles for their security, and one of them was near the post where this assembly was kept; and the *Indians*, proud and impatient, had a mind to attack it immediately; but *Caupolican*, their general, forbid it, in order to do it with more dexterity and safety. He commanded *Palta*, who perform'd the place of serjeant-general, to chuse him out fourscore soldiers of the bravest, and such as were least known to the *Spaniards*, and the *Indians* their friends: these he put under the conduct of two very brave men, *Cayaguano* and *Alcatipay*, and order'd them to enter the castle with their arms by this stratagem. The

An Indian
stratagem.

Araucanos, though in peace, were not permitted to enter the castle, except such as serv'd the *Spaniards*; and these enter'd often with their loads of grass, wood, and other necessaries for the garrison. *Caupolican* order'd these fourscore men to feign themselves to be servants of the *Spaniards*, and having hid their arms in the grass they carried, to answer nothing, but pretend they did not hear if they were ask'd any questions: they acted their parts to the life, some counterfeiting lameness, others weariness, so that they were all let in without suspicion: then they took their arms out of the grass, and fell unanimously upon the *Spaniards*, who were much astonish'd at so unforeseen a boldness: however, they gave the alarm,

and all coming out of their quarters, resisted them, so as to kill some of the *Indians*; the others, either out of fear of the *Spaniards*, or on purpose to draw them out of the castle in their pursuit, retir'd, on purpose to gain time till their general *Caupolican* could come up with his army; which he did with a very numerous one, and forced the *Spaniards* to retire to their fort. He besieg'd them in it, and after having kill'd many of them, those who remain'd alive were glad to leave the post, and get away, judging it better to retire to *Puren*, lest they should lose all; whereas being join'd with the garrison of *Puren*, they might better resist the enemy, though he was very powerful, and much elevated.

The news of this invasion soon reach'd the *Conception*, and the governor *Pedro de Valdivia*, who was then there, began presently to consider how to remedy so great a mischief. Some blame him as tardy in doing of it; for to secure the treasure of the mines, where (as *Herrera* says) he had fifty thousand vassals at work to get gold for him. Before he went to succour those in *Puren*, he went out of his way, and stay'd the erecting of a fort at the mines, which took him so much time, that he came later than was requisite to their relief. But, indeed, if any thing was ill done by him, it was the making too much haste; for without staying for the relief and succours he might have receiv'd from the other cities, he set out with a force not strong enough to encounter that of *Caupolican*: his courage deceiv'd him; for being elevated with his successes, and trusting to his fortune, he run into the precipice, as we shall shew in the following chapter.

Valdivia
marches
against the
Araucanos.

C H A P. XV.

The Governor Pedro de Valdivia, and all his People, are kill'd by the Indians. The famous Action of Lautaro is related, that being the chief Cause of this Event.

THE time of this great captain's death was now come; all things therefore seem'd to concur to that end. The present remedy that was to be applied to this mischief, to stop its progress, and the delay of those succours he expected from the other garrisons, were all combining causes; his heart misgave him at his setting out from *Tucapel*. He had sent out parties to bring him an account of the state of the enemy, but none came back: this gave him some apprehension, but being engag'd, it was necessary to go on. He had sent out scouts, as I said, and had scarce gone two leagues on his way after them, but he saw the heads of two of them hanging upon a tree: this increas'd his fear, and he consulted with

those with him, whether it would not be rash to proceed. The young men were of opinion, that it would be a lessening of their reputation to turn their backs to danger, though there came to them an *Indian* of their friends, and desir'd them not to proceed, because *Caupolican* was at *Tucapel* with twenty thousand *Indians*, and that the hazard they ran was manifest; but he followed on his way, and came within sight of the enemy: they soon engag'd, and the battle was cruel on both sides, so that for a great while no advantage could be perceiv'd, because the brave actions on both sides kept victory in suspense.

He engages
them.

After a good while of this contention, the *Spaniards* began to prevail, and to cry
Viva

The treachery of Lautaro.

His language to the Araucanos.

Viva Espanna, or *Live Spain*; with which recovering new vigour, the *Indians* seem'd to give way, when (as *Arzilla*, in his *Araucana*, says) the famous *Lautaro*, an *Indian*, who had been bred page to the governor *Valdivia*, having more regard to the love of his native country and his liberty, than for the education he had receiv'd, and the fidelity he owed his master, went over to the *Indians*, and spoke to them in this manner: "What is this, brave *Araucanos*? do you turn your backs when your liberty is concern'd, your country, your children, your posterity? Either recover your liberty, or lose your lives; for 'tis a less misfortune to die, than to live slaves. Do you intend to stain the glory of your ancestors, acquir'd for so many ages past, in one hour? Remember you are descended from those who gain'd that renown by resisting their enemies, and not flying from them; and such as fear'd not to lose both lives and fortunes to preserve their fame: drive away all fear, generous foldiers, and either live free, or die." With these words he so inflam'd the minds of his friends, that despising death, they return'd with fury to invade those whom before they flew from. *Lautaro*, to encourage them the more, led them on, shaking his lance against the governor, his master; who, surpris'd at his action, cried, *Traytor what dost thou do?* To which he answer'd only with a thrust or two, animating his people to do the same. This renewed the fight, and they all resolv'd, by the example and exhortations of *Lautaro*, to conquer, or die; which they perform'd with so much fury, that the concern of both sides was now at the highest, and the contention only who should venture farthest into danger. Many *Spaniards* and *Indians* fell on both sides, and *Lautaro* still encourag'd his countrymen without any relenting. *Valdivia* did the same by the *Spaniards*, and shewed himself every where, in the greatest danger, without the least apprehension, though he saw many of the bravest of his men fall by the sword. One would have thought the *Indians* had but just begun to engage, to see how like lions they fell on, and begun to find victory incline to their side, till at last there fell so many *Spaniards*, that *Valdivia* was almost left alone. In this extremity he went aside with his chaplain to confess his sins, that being the principal thing he had now to do. The *Indians* gave him but little time to make his peace with heaven; for a great troop of them fell upon him with darts and lances, killing the chaplain, and taking him prisoner, they brought him

Valdivia taken prisoner.

alive to their general, for the last triumph of their victory.

OVALLE.
1646.

This hitherto unconquer'd captain appear'd in the presence of the great *Caupolican*, his hands tied behind him as captive, his face all bloody, though venerable. He ask'd his life as a favour; he who a little before had it in his power to grant it his enemies. He turn'd his eyes towards his *Lautaro*, and with their language seem'd to desire him to intercede for him who had been his lord and master, and by whose means he was in this extremity. He promis'd *Caupolican*, if he might have his life, to withdraw all his forces, and leave the country free from their incumbrance. He made oath of this several times, and persuaded with so much eloquence his hearers, that *Caupolican*, who was as generous as brave, began to relent, and incline to compassion. But the greatest part said it was madness to trust to any words or promises of a captive, who is forced to humble himself; but that when he should be free, he would do that which should be most for his advantage. However, the dispute between them increas'd, and no doubt but *Lautaro* would have inclin'd to mercy; for if he fought against his master, it was not out of any hatred to his person, but out of the great kindness he had to his country, which, with the desire of liberty, prevail'd over the gratitude he owed for the good usage he had receiv'd at his hands; but nothing of this was able to appease the vulgar, though *Caupolican* inclin'd to clemency; so they forc'd him to pronounce his death, and to execute it immediately in hot blood, though they differ'd in the manner of it; for some say that they poured melted gold into his mouth, bidding him once for all content his thirst after that metal which he had so insatiably coveted: others say, that one of those *Caciques*, bearing impatiently that it should bear a question whether he should live or die, gave him a blow on the head with a club; which *Caupolican* resent'd highly, as a want of respect to him. That which I find most probable is, that according to the custom of the *Indians*, they made flutes and trumpets of the bones of his legs and thighs, and kept his head as a testimony of so remarkable a victory, and to animate their youth to undertake the like actions, as they might see by this their fathers had done. Thus I have heard it related.

He is slain by the Indians.

They make flutes and trumpets of his bones.

Of all the *Spanish* army, 'tis said there escaped only two *Indian* friends, who taking advantage of the obscurity of the night, hid themselves in a thicket, from whence creeping out as well as they could, they

Of all the Spanish army, but two escape.

1646. *OVALLE* came to the *Conception*, and brought the news of this fatal event. The city was immediately full of confusion and complaints, the women crying and bewailing the loss

of their husbands and sons, others that of their fathers and relations, and all together the common calamity of their city, in which they were all equally concern'd.

C H A P. XVI.

What happened after the Death of the Governor Pedro de Valdivia.

THE enemy having obtain'd so remarkable a victory, their general *Caupolican* commanded the retreat to be founded, and call'd a council, to consider whether, or no, it would be best to follow their blow warmly. Many were of opinion it would be most expedient to fall upon the cities immediately, before they could prepare for them; yet *Caupolican*, after having heard them all, resolv'd to do otherwise. 'Tis better, said he, to expect our enemies in our own homes, than to go to seek them at theirs, where all men fight with more valour; let them come to seek us in our mountains and bogs, where we are sure of a safe retreat: let us give our enemies a free access to us, who have our situation to befriend us; and in the mean time our horses and soldiers may refresh themselves: and if they out of fear (which I believe they will not) do forbear to seek us out, we may attack them when we will. Having spoke thus, he took *Lautaro* by the hand, and having publickly commended him, by attributing to him the victory and the liberty of his country, he, by consent of all, made him his lieutenant-general, and gave him leave to chuse out the men he would have to serve under him, to go and pitch upon a fit post to expect the *Spaniards* in. *Lautaro* was no very tall man, but well set, and strong, industrious, cautious, of good counsel, gentle, and well proportion'd, very brave, as we have seen, and shall see hereafter.

Caupolican makes Lautaro his lieutenant-general. His character.

To celebrate this victory, the *Indians* solemniz'd publick games of wrestling, running, leaping, and other proofs of their strength and dexterity: they made also great feasting with dancings, and for several days did nothing but rejoice and be merry; but still without forgetting to be upon their guard, as men that expected their enemies, whom they presum'd desirous of revenge.

Francisco de Villagran was lieutenant-general to *Valdivia* when he was kill'd; who remaining chief in command, assembled all he could to go and take vengeance of the enemy for this defeat. Setting out, he came as far as *Arauco*; and being come to a high mountain in the way, he found *Lautaro* on the top of it, with ten thousand men, without having sent out any to disturb the *Spaniards* march; for he had left all the passes easy, to oblige them to come to that

Villagran marches to revenge Valdivia's death.

place: it was not far from the sea, which wash'd the foot of the mountain on one side; the coming up on the other side was easy; all the rest was precipice; but the top was a plain fit to draw up in, and very proper for his design.

The *Spanish* general being in presence, and comes to a battle with *Lautaro*, the armies began to draw up on both sides; and not to make the *Indians* too presumptuous, he order'd three troops of horse to begin the charge, in hopes to draw the *Indians* from their post, but in vain; for though they made three attacks, yet *Lautaro* would not stir, but receiv'd them with showers of arrows, stones, and darts, which made them retire faster than they came on. Our people, who could not break this battalion, with the evident danger of falling into precipices, did what they could, but with little effect, only tiring their horses; for the enemy kept his post, not a man of them stirring out of his rank; only *Lautaro* would permit some of the bravest to go out, and defy the *Spaniards* body to body. There came forth, among the rest, a brave youth, call'd *Curio man*, who taking a long career, would throw his lance with that dexterity, that he wounded many of the *Spaniards*: he did this seven times, and at the eighth, *Villagran*, being vex'd at his importunate boldness, commanded a famous soldier, call'd *Diego Lano*, to chastise the *Indian's* insolence, which he did; and it was all this high courage and strength could perform. The *Spaniards* seeing themselves tir'd, and that all the movement of their horse signified little, and that the *Indians* were taking the passes behind them, began to use their small shot, which at first made a great slaughter among the *Indians*. *Lautaro*, to remedy this inconvenience, commanded *Leucaton*, one of his captains, to attack the *Spaniards* on the flank, and not to stop till he came up close with their musqueteers, that by this means mingling with them, they might avoid their small shot, which in that case could not be of any use to the *Spaniards*, without wounding their own men too. This he observ'd, and they ever since have practis'd the same with good success; and without this boldness, in which they always lose some men, they would be much inferior to the *Spaniards*, they having no fire-arms to use in the like manner: they shew

shew in this their invincible courage, and undisturb'd bravery, by which they make to themselves a defence of their own enemies; for being once mingled with them, they cannot offend them, without destroying at the same time their own people.

The fight on both sides was bravely maintain'd, *Lautaro* relieving and encouraging his men, as *Villagran* did his, both of them doing the parts both of general and soldier, and exposing themselves to the greatest danger. He that signaliz'd his valour most on our side, was the famous captain *Pedro Olmos de Aquillera*, killing with his own hand four of the chiefs of the *Indians*. Our army was encourag'd with his valour, which he inherited from that noble family so spread in *Andaluzia*: he was seconded by the *Bernales Pantoias*, *Alvarados*, and many others, who perform'd wonders in this battle, which was long contested, very bloody, and in suspense to the last. The enemy was much superior in strength to our forces, and therefore the victory began to incline to their side; for though *Villagran* the general, and some others, would rather have chose to die there with honour, than turn their backs, yet the greatest part judging that there was no honour lost in a vigorous retreat, and that it would be rashness to persist in so desperate a case, they began to retire, fighting and defending themselves; but the enemy, elevated with this success, followed close, and having knock'd *Villagran* off his horse, they had made an end

of him, if he had not valiantly defended himself till thirteen of his men came to his relief. OVALLE.
1646.

These famous commanders did not obtain less glory in this retreat, than if they had gain'd a victory; for the enemy following them for six leagues together, being a hundred to one, and having seiz'd upon most of the passes, and the numbers still increasing, yet the *Spaniards* made a noble defence, and kill'd many of them. Those who escap'd from this engagement, came with the sad news of the ill success to the city of the *Conception*, which set all the inhabitants in an uproar, mingled with lamentations and cries, every one being in some measure concern'd in this calamity; for between *Spaniards* and friendly *Indians*, there died in this engagement two thousand five hundred. One would have thought the day of judgment had been come, to see the confusion that was in the city upon this news; one laments the death of his father, another of her husband; some cry for their sons, some for their brothers; the women wring their hands, pull off their hair, fill the air with lamentable cries; the children cling to their parents, asking for their lost fathers, which is more grievous to them than daggers. In the midst of these horrors, night came on, in which no one could shut their eyes, for the memory of their misfortunes keep the soul attentive, without any consolation. The Spaniards beaten a second time.

C H A P. XVII.

Lautaro sacks the City of the Conception, and Caupolican besieges the City of the Imperial, which is defended by the Queen of Heaven.

Misfortunes seldom come alone; and so it happened to this afflicted city, which, instead of receiving comfort from the approaching day, no sooner did it appear, when the noise of drums and trumpets gave a warm alarm of the enemies being at hand. Here the confusion increas'd; for now the concern was not for the loss of others, but for every one's own safety, the danger threatening them so immediately: there was nothing but disorder, no counsel nor resolution being to be found in the wisest: they could not defend themselves, because they were so over-powered in numbers by the enemy; and the retreat, though necessary, was difficult, because of the approach of the *Indians*. In this hard conflict, at last the resolution that prevail'd, was to abandon the city, without pretending to save any thing but their lives. They

leave the city then, and all the gold they had got together in such quantities. They go out in long files, the mothers helping their little children along: the way that they undertook, was to the city of *St. Jago*, a long one, in which many rivers were to be cross'd, and hard passes to be gone thorough: this labour was accompanied with the perpetual fright of the enemies pursuing them. Who can relate the hardships of hunger and other sufferings, through so long a tract of mountains, deserts, and uninhabited countries? How the women, the children, the old men, could bear this fatigue, we must leave to imagination to represent the true idea of these misfortunes! Let us therefore return to the *Indians*. The *Spaniards* had hardly made an end of abandoning the city, when the *Indians* enter'd into it; and not being able to

They fly from the Conception.

Lautaro enters and sacks the city.

OVALLE. to execute their rage upon the inhabitants, they did it upon the houses, to which they set fire, and consum'd them to the very foundation, killing even the very animals which the *Spaniards* left behind them. Thus was lost the city most abounding in gold, and situated in the most populous part of the *Indian* country; for 'tis said there were not less than a hundred thousand *Indians*, with their families, who were all employed in gathering gold for the *Spaniards*, whom they enriched to that degree, that *Pedro de Valdivia*, if he had liv'd, would have had fifty thousand Crowns of gold a-year, and others twenty and thirty thousand.

This burning of the city being over, news was brought, that *Caupolican* had called a great assembly in *Arauco*, which made *Lautaro* return with his people to be at it. When the two generals of the *Araucanos* met, they greeted one another for the victories obtained over the *Spaniards*; and in sign of triumph, one hundred and thirty caciques, all dressed themselves in the *spanish* dress with the cloaths they took from the *Spaniards* killed in the battle. The general had *Valdivia's* cloaths, which were, as 'tis reported of green velvet, laced with gold lace, a back and breast of well tempered steel, and a helmet with a great emerald for crest. All having seated themselves in order by the general's command, he proposed to them the design of conquering back all that was gained from them by the *Spaniards*, who now were so dejected with their loss. They all agreed to his desire, every one delivering his opinion with great pride and arrogance. 'Tis said, that the old and prudent *Colocolo*, hearing them deliver their opinions with so much insolence and presumption, that it looked as if all the world was too weak to resist their valour, humbled them a little, by putting them in mind, That if they had obtained two victories, the *Spaniards* had gained many more over them, and had made them serve as slaves; therefore that they ought to behave themselves with moderation and temper, that they might expect success from their arms; and added, that it was his opinion, that they should divide their forces into three parts, and at the same time assault the city of the *Imperial*.

Puchecalco, a famous conjuring Cacique,

following the same thought of humbling the intolerable haughtiness of the assembly, told them, That they might give over their presumption; for he was to acquaint them, that having consulted his oracles, they had answered him, *That though at present they were so victorious, yet at last they were to live under the Spanish yoke in perpetual slavery.* The Cacique *Tucapel* could not bear to hear this; and rising from his place, with his mace of arms gave him such a blow as took away his life. The general was highly offended at this insolence, and being resolved to chastize the author of it, the whole assembly was disturbed; and though they all endeavoured to lay hold on the murderer, yet he defended himself so well with his mace of arms, that it was not easy to seize him: but *Lautaro*, who had great power with the general, made up the whole business; and the result of the council being to besiege the city of the *Imperial*, they immediately put it in execution.

Their army took its posts three leagues *Caupolican* from the *Imperial*; which city, though it had a good garrison of brave men, was not *designed to besiege the Imperial,* nevertheless prepared nor provided for a *but is miraculously prevented.* siege with ammunition and victuals, because the enemies would have taken it, if any had been sent to it; but the queen of heaven delivered them from this great danger. The enemies drawing near the city, there arose on a sudden a mighty storm of hail and rain, with black clouds; and their *Epunamon* appeared to them in form of a terrible dragon, casting out fire at his mouth, and his tail curled up, bidding them make haste, for the city was theirs, being unprovided; and that they should enter it, and put to the sword all the christians; and so disappeared. But as they were pursuing their design, animated by this oracle, on a sudden the heavens cleared up, and a very beautiful woman appeared upon a bright cloud, and shewing them a charming, but majestic and severe countenance, took from them the pride and haughtiness inspired into them by their first vision, commanding them to return to their own homes, for god was resolved to favour the christians; and they obey'd immediately. To which the author who reports this story adds, That the whole camp saw the apparition, which was on the 23d of April, and that all agree in this.

C H A P. XVIII.

The City of the Conception is rebuilt ; and Lautaro having taken it a second Time, marches to take the City of St. Jago, where he dies.

*The Con-
ception re-
built.*

THE Spaniards being in safety, began to think of returning to the *Conception*, and rebuilding of it. To this end they raised men at *St. Jago*, and with great difficulty compassed their intention, making a good fortress within the city for their better security. The *Indians* of the neighbourhood, though they were in their hearts as averse as any others to be commanded by strangers, and to let them build cities in their territories, disssembled nevertheless at present, but in due time gave advice to *Arauco*, desiring help to drive out these newcomers, or make an end of them at once. *Lautaro* came to them presently with a good army ; and some companies of *Spaniards*, which went out to encounter him, were forced to retire to the fort they made, in which they defended themselves as long as they were able to withstand the force of *Lautaro* ; but at last being overpowered, they were forced to retire a second time to the city of *St. Jago*. Many *Spaniards* were lost, and *Lautaro* followed the pursuit, in which many brave actions were performed on both sides : among the rest, a famous *Indian* captain, called *Rengo*, following three *Spanish* captains, who were retiring, called them cowards, and said a hundred insolent things to them, which moved one of them to attack him at the passage of a river ; but he secured himself by choosing a strong post ; so the *Spaniards* went on to *St. Jago*, and *Lautaro* retreated to *Arauco*, where great rejoicings were made for this new victory.

*Lautaro
takes it a
second time.*

*Lautaro
marches to
besiege
St. Jago.*

The *Indians* renewed their meetings ; and being much elevated with their success, they came to a resolution of not troubling themselves with the lesser cities, which they reckoned as their own ; but to attack the capital of *St. Jago*. *Lautaro* offered to undertake this enterprize ; and chusing the most warlike among them, he marched with a powerful army. He passed the rivers *Biobio*, *Itata*, *Maule*, and *Mataquito* ; near this last he raised a fort to secure his retreat, if need were, he being engaged far from his own territories.

When the news of this resolution came to *St. Jago*, many looked upon it as a fable, not being capable of imagining, that the *Indians* had boldness enough to march so far to attack them ; but those who were

come back from the city of the *Conception* undeceived them, as knowing by experience *Lautaro's* courage ; they therefore fortified the place, and provided it : they also sent out parties to engage the enemies, if the occasion offered ; but *Lautaro* forced them to return in haste to carry the news, and yet some remained behind too.

Francisco de Villagran, the lieutenant-general was sick at this time ; and so sent his cousin *Pedro de Villagran*, with all the force he could make, to meet *Lautaro* ; they lodged within half an hour from the fort which the *Indians* had raised upon the *Rio Claro* ; the next day they entered the fort without any resistance ; for *Lautaro* had cunningly ordered his men to seem to fly, that he might catch the *Spaniards* in the fort ; and so, when he saw his time, he gave the signal, and his men fell on the *Spaniards* like lions, who had enough to do to make their retreat, and escape from their hands. The *Indians* followed them for a league, doing them much mischief, though they defended themselves with great valour. *Lautaro* feigned a second time to fly ; and our people being reinforced, engaged him afresh. They attacked his fort, and gave three assaults to it ; where they were received with showers of arrows, darts, and stones, and at last forced to retire to a valley ; whence they design'd to return, and try their fortune again : but *Lautaro* saved them the trouble ; for resolving to make an end of them all at once, and in order to it feigning that he wanted provisions, he sent to our camp to demand some. His project was to let in a river upon the *Spaniard's* camp, which he could do conveniently, because it was already in dams and canals ; and so having lodged, so as they should not be able to stir, seize all the passes behind them. But *Villagran* having discovered this stratagem, raised his camp, and retired to *St. Jago*, to the great disappointment of the enemy.

Yet this did not make *Lautaro* give over his design ; for considering that he could not attack *St. Jago*, which was well provided with men and ammunition, except he had a greater strength, he raised a fort in a valley to cover himself, while his succours should arrive, and enable him to attack *St. Jago*. Those of the city were making,

M m with

OVALLE. with great care, preparations for their defence; and had sent for succours to all the other cities. Their general *Villagran* had sent out upon this design; and making as if he was going to *Arauco*, had on a sudden marched to the *Imperial*, from whence he brought many good men away with him; and while *Lautaro* was raising his fort, *Villagran*, guided by an *Indian*, came swiftly and silently upon *Lautaro*, and attacked his fort. In the first assault that was given, *Lautaro* himself fell, wounded by an arrow, which struck him in the heart: thus ended that valiant captain of the *Araucanos*. His foldiers were not at all discouraged with

*Lautaro
killed by an
arrow.*

this misfortune of their general; but rather enraged with such a loss, and a desire to revenge his death, they fell like lions upon the *Spaniards*, taking no quarter at their hands. There were on both sides great actions performed; but the resolution of the *Indians* was the noblest in the world, preferring their glory to their lives, which they husbanded so little, that though they were broke, and but few left in a fighting condition, yet they ran upon the *Spaniards* lances, and with their hands pulled them into their bodies, to come close to their enemy, and revenge their death with his, or at least die in the attempt.

C H A P. XIX.

Don Garcia Hurtado de Mendoza comes to the Government of Chile; what happened at his Arrival, and in the Engagement he had with the Araucanos:

AFTER the death of *Pedro de Valdivia*, there was application made from *Chile* to the viceroy of *Peru*, who is to provide a governor till the king can send one, that is, both president and governor independent of *Peru*. The viceroy at this time was *Don Antonio Hurtado de Mendoza*, marquis of *Canete*, who governed with great zeal, and a prudent severity, making exemplary punishments where they were necessary, by which he secured the country. He had then with him his son *Don Garcia Hurtado de Mendoza*, who afterwards succeeded him in his viceroyship, with as much applause and esteem of the world. The ambassadors from *Chile* desired him of his excellency the father for their governor, which he granted. King *Philip* the second had appointed the *Adelantado Hyeronimo de Alderete*, to succeed the governor *Pedro de Valdivia*, whose death was known at court; but the news came likewise that *Alderete* was dead in the island of *Taboga* near *Panama*. The viceroy's son having raised a good body of horse, sent some of them by land with the horses, and he embarked with the rest; and after a hard storm, in which they had like to have been all lost, he arrived in the bay of the city of the *Conception*, and landed upon the island of *Quiriquina*, to inform himself from thence of the state of the country. The people of the island, who were fierce and warlike, took arms when they saw the ships draw near the harbour, and pretended to hinder the *Spaniards* from landing; but having no fire-arms, as soon as the cannon of the ships began to fire, they gave way. As soon as the governor landed he published the design of his coming, that the *Indians* might know it; which was, to

Don Garcia, the new governor of Chile, lands at Quiriquina.

save their souls by the predication of the gospel, and reconcile them to god by the means of baptism; and to confer that sacrament, he had with him religious men of the famous orders of *St. Francis* and the *Mercede*: that if they would submit to that, he would treat with them in the name of the emperor *Charles V.* This declaration reached the ears of the *Araucanos*; and there assembled at *Arauco* sixteen caciques, and many other captains, to treat about what was best for them to do in this case; and though many youthful and arrogant speeches were made, according to their usual haughtiness, which made them despise all good counsel and peace, yet the old and prudent *Colocolo* restrained their pride with prudent reasons, and persuaded them to treat with the *Spaniards*, since they were by them invited to do it. *It cannot hurt us*, said he, *to hear them: we shall have our forces as strong still to maintain our right, if they demand unjust things.* This opinion was followed by the most prudent among them; and they sent for their ambassador the *Cacique Milalan*, a man of great rhetoric and eloquence among them, giving him order to treat with the *Spaniards*, and observe well their strength; and that he should shew inclinations to peace, to draw them to land on the continent, and forsake the island, hoping that the desire of gold would tempt them to go further into the country. *Milalan* came to the governor's tent; and making a small but civil bow, saluted him, and the other *Spaniards* that were with him; then with cheerful countenance he delivered his message. He said, *That his countrymen admitted the terms of peace that were proposed, and should observe those of friendship; not out*

The Indians send an ambassador to treat with him.

of any terror or apprehension caused in them by the arrival of these new forces; for no power was great enough to terrify them, having sufficiently experienced their strength in the success they had hitherto had; but that which mov'd them was the compassion they had for so many innocent people, so many women and children, who, upon occasion of this war, remain'd widows and orphans: that upon fair terms they would own the king of Spain, upon condition that he did not concern himself any ways with their liberty or rights; that if they had any thought of acting by violence, and making them slaves, they would sooner eat their own children, and kill themselves, than suffer it.

The governor answered him with all assurance of a good treatment as they expected; and having made him some presents, dispatch'd him back to give an account of his embassy: but this was not sufficient security for either side; so they remain'd upon their guard. The *Indians* observing the caution of the *Spaniards*, to give them more security, feign'd to dismiss their forces, but secretly gave them orders to stand upon their guard, and not lay down their arms, but be ready upon any occasion that might happen: yet the *Spaniards* for all this did not think fit to land upon the continent, but stay'd two months upon the island where they first landed, till the winter was entirely over. About the spring, they set on shore about one hundred and thirty men of the bravest among them, to raise a fort, as they did, upon the top of a hill which overlooks the city of *Penco*, (otherwise call'd the city of the *Conception*.) Under the protection of this fortress, the rest of the *Spaniards* went out of the island, hoping, that in a little time, their horses, which were coming by land, would arrive, having some news of them: in the mean time, they cut wood and fascines to fortify their camp, the governor and the commanders shewing an example to the rest in the labour of retrenching themselves, and cutting of wood, as if they had never done any thing else all their life-time. They brought it to perfection in a little time, and planted upon it eight field-pieces, with all other necessary provisions for their defence.

He lands on the continent, and raises a fort.

The Indians attack it.

The *Araucanos*, who were watching all their motions, no sooner saw them busy in their fort, but, without expecting any further proof of their intentions, which they took to be for war, call'd immediately an assembly, and with all their strength came like lions, with a resolution to demolish the new fort. They took up their post at *Talcaguano*, about two miles from the *Spaniards* fort, and about break of day they gave an

alarm, and having first challeng'd out many *Spaniards* to single combat, they at last fell on in a body, with no more fear of the cannon-bullets than if they had been of cotton or wooll, knowing, that though they receiv'd at first some damage, it could last no longer than till the battalions were engag'd. With this resolution they fell on like lions, and some of them got over the fortifications; amongst whom was *Tucapel*, who did wonderful actions. Neither were the *Spaniards* unprepar'd for them, doing extraordinary things, which it were too long to describe in particular, though the actions were such as very well deserve it.

The *Spaniards* who were in the island and aboard the ships, hearing of the danger of their companions, came to their assistance, and by the help of God, who aided them, join'd their friends; and then thus united they began to prevail over the *Araucanos*; who, finding themselves inferior, and having lost many of their bravest men, began to retreat all but *Tucapel*, who having stay'd last, and being sorely wounded, yet made his escape from the *Spaniards*, whom he left full of admiration of his valour and resolution.

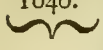
About this time the horses which came from *St. Jago* arriv'd, and with them a troop of good horsemen from the *Imperial*. The enemies muster'd all their forces, and the *Spaniards* went to seek them out in the valley of *Arauco*, where they had another very bloody engagement: the *Araucanos* fled, or rather retir'd; and the *Spaniards* having taken one prisoner call'd *Gualbarino*, they, in order to terrify the rest, cut off both his hands; but the *Araucanos* were so far from being terrified by it, that this enrag'd them the more; for *Gualbarino* himself being return'd to his countrymen, went up and down, begging them to revenge the injury done to him, which they all looked upon as their own. *Caupolican* their general sent to challenge the governor *Don Garcia* with all his strength, telling him, that he would stay for him in his camp, which he moved near the *Spanish* camp, which was at *Millarapue*. He came over night; and the next day presented him battle; which was as well disputed as the rest, both sides fighting with extreme valour. The *Indians* pressed the *Spaniards* so hard, that victory had declared for them, had not a *Spanish* battalion, in which alone remain'd all the *Spaniards* hopes, charg'd so desperately among the *Indians*, that they were forced to retire, and leave the field to the *Spaniards*; but their retreat was with great honour and reputation. 'Tis related, that in this engagement some of the neighbouring

OVALLE.
1646.

And are beaten off.

The new governor reinforced.

He gives Caupolican battle, and beats him.

OVALLE. 1646. 
 bouring *Indians* were made prisoners; and that though they were put to a most exquisite torture, to force them to reveal something that the *Spaniards* wanted to know, yet they remain'd constant and true to their country, as if they had been insensible of pain. The *Spaniards* had here a considerable advantage; for, besides many dead enemies whom they left upon the spot, they took twelve prisoners of the chief among the *Indians*, whom they hang'd upon so many trees for an example to the rest; and among them that same *Gualbarino*; who not only shewed in dying an intrepid mind, but encouraged the others: and amongst the rest, a *Cacique*, who began to fear and beg his life; to whom *Gualbarino* spoke before all with so much haughtiness, taxing his base cowardice as if he had been the conqueror, and not the conquered, which struck the *Spaniards* with such admiration, that they were beside themselves.

He raises
another
fort.

From this place our camp marched to the valley where *Valdivia* was lost. Here the *Spaniards* rais'd a good fort; from whence they made their excursions upon the enemy, endeavouring to advance their conquests, but not without danger of being

often cut off; particularly the hazard they ran at a narrow pass, caus'd by the mountains on the way to *Puren*, where they were attack'd by the *Indians*, and very hard set by them, whom they might have destroy'd if they had not fallen to plunder the baggage: for a company of *Spaniards* observing this miscarriage, seiz'd on a spot on the top of an hill, from whence *And again beats the Indians.* with their small shot they so gall'd the *Indians* below, that they fled in confusion to avoid such a tempest, leaving the *Spaniards* masters of the field, but much weakened: having been forely handled in this rencounter, they retir'd to their camp, where they were receiv'd with great demonstration of joy. After this, leaving a good garrison in the fort, well provided for two months, the governor went to visit the other cities, to strengthen them, and provide them with necessaries against all attacks, which they had reason to fear; for *Caupolican*, enraged that in three months he had lost three victories, had call'd a general assembly; where it was resolv'd never to give over, but either die or conquer, that they might drive out the *Spaniards*, and restore their country to its liberty.

CHAP. XX.

More Events of War: The Death and Conversion of Caupolican.

CAUPOLICAN followed his designs; but fortune seem'd to be weary of assisting him; for in most rencounters he came off either worsted, or entirely defeated, and the victory snatch'd out of his hands when he thought himself sure of it: this made his people begin to grow weary of his command; and the vulgar began to censure his conduct as too remiss, and that the desire of preserving his power, and being general, made him neglect opportunities of putting an end to the war.

Caupolican being inform'd of these suspicions of his own people, call'd a new assembly, in which he propos'd methods of carrying on the war, so as they might obtain an entire liberty. This was unanimously agreed to, with a firm resolution of not giving it over till they either conquer'd or died. This resolution coming to the knowledge of the governor *Don Garcia Hurtado de Mendoza*, who was gone, as we have seen, to the city of the *Imperial*, to fortify it, he dispatch'd to the fort advice of what pass'd, and sent them a competent relief.

Amongst other designs pitch'd upon by *Caupolican*, the first was to surprize the *Spaniards* in their fortrefs by a stratagem

before they were aware of him, and so master the place. The other captains of repute, *Rengo*, *Orompello*, and *Tucapel*, who were us'd to lead always the vanguard, did not approve of his project; and so let him go by himself with his own forces, they scorning, as they said, to obtain a victory by fraud or surprize. *Caupolican* set out then by himself; and being come within three leagues of the *spanish* fortrefs, he sent out his spies to observe their disposition, and how they might be easiliest circumvented. He chose out for this purpose one of his best captains, whose name was *Pran*, a cunning sagacious man, and prudent, with a great deal of ready wit. This captain disguis'd himself; and putting on the habit of an ordinary *Indian*, he went alone, and without arms, as a private person, to the fortrefs of the *Spaniards*. He entered the fort without suspicion, or being known by the other friendly *Indians*, with whom he soon grew acquainted; and walking up and down, he observed our camp and forces, and took particular notice of the time of day that our men us'd to be least upon their guard, which was generally at noon, when they went to sleep, to repair their strength

strength, which was waisted by their night-watches.

Pran, an
Indian spy,
forms a de-
sign against
the Span-
iards.

There was in the *Spanish* fort, a young Indian, (not like *Lautaro*, in whom the love of his country prevail'd over his duty to his master,) but of another temper; his name was *Andres*, servant to a *Spanish* gentleman, and very much inclin'd to all the *Spanish* nation. *Pran* had made a great friendship with this young man; and one day, as they were going together in the fields to seek out some provision, as they us'd to do, talking from one thing to another, *Pran* discover'd himself entirely to his friend *Andres*; persuading him to help on the design he came about, since upon its success the liberty of the whole nation depended. *Andres*, who was not less sagacious and prudent than *Pran*, promis'd him all he could desire; but dissembled all the while. This being settled, they agreed, that each of them should return home to his camp, and that the next day *Andres* should come to a certain post they agreed on, and there *Pran* should meet him, and carry him to *Caupolican's* quarters, where he might settle all matters with him. *Pran* went back to the *Indians* camp, overjoyed that he had succeeded so well, as he thought: he gave a particular account of all the business to *Caupolican*, while *Andres* did the same to captain *Reynoso*, who commanded in the *Spanish* fort. If God Almighty had not by this way deliver'd the *Spaniards* out of this eminent danger, they must have perish'd; for naturally *Andres* ought to have been of the side of his own countrymen.

But it turns
to the
ruin of the
Indians.

According to what had been agreed between them, *Andres* came the next day to the assignation, where he met his friend *Pran*; and they went together to *Caupolican*, who receiv'd him with all demonstrations of joy and confidence, shewing him his camp, and all his army; the result was, that he should assault the *Spaniards* the next day about noon. *Andres* went back to the *Spaniards*, to inform them of all that pass'd, and by that captain *Reynoso* knew how to dispose every thing to receive the attack. *Caupolican* came at the time appointed with all his *Indians*, the greatest part of which were suffer'd to enter, the *Spaniards* making as if they were asleep; but on a sudden, upon a sign given, they rose up like lions, and making a furious discharge on those enter'd, the horse fallied to engage those who had remain'd without, of whom they made a great slaughter. The surprize of the *Indians* was so great, that few of them could make their escape; but *Caupolican*, with ten more, sav'd himself by by-paths, though he was hotly pursued; the *Indians* that were

overtaken, still denying they knew any thing of him, and neither threats nor gifts could oblige them to reveal what they might know more.

OVALLE.
1646.

But it being very hard there should not be one traitor among many loyal men, the *Spaniards* lite at last upon one of his soldiers, who was discontented that he had not been advanc'd according to his pretensions, who betrayed to them where he was: this man guided them by a secret path to a place where they could not be discover'd, and from thence shewed them a very thick wood, about nine miles from *Ongolmo*, where in a thicket by a river side, over a precipice, this brave man had hid himself till he could get a new army, and rally his men.

Caupoli-
can be-
trayed by
one of his
own men.

The *Spaniards* came upon him on a sudden, and surpriz'd him with the few that were with him; and though he did all that was in his power to defend himself, yet they master'd him. His wife seeing him a prisoner, and his hands tied behind him, call'd him coward, and us'd all the opprobrious language to him that was possible.

He is taken
by the Spa-
niards.

Caupolican was deservedly among the *Indians* the most valued of their generals; and accordingly, in an assembly of sixteen *Caciques*, all sovereign lords, who met to raise an army against the *Spaniards*, he had the chief command given him. This was the man who, with fourscore bold fellows, surpriz'd the castle of *Arauco*, and overcame the *Spaniards* in a bloody encounter without the city walls: this was he who durst expect the general *Valdivia* in open field, and routed him and his whole army, so as there was not one *Spaniard* left alive: this was he who destroyed *Puren*, and sack'd *Penco*, not leaving one stone upon another in it, the *Spaniards* having been all frighted away by the terror of his name: this, in fine, was the man who manag'd all the war with such success, by his military skill and valour, that his authority was every where respected. This great man was now, by the means of a traitor, deliver'd up to his most cruel enemies. In this calamity he shewed no baseness; for though he begged his life, it was in a grave way, promising in return to cause all the country to submit to the king of *Spain*, and to give way to introduce the christian religion. "Consider, said he, to captain *Reynoso*, His speech.
"that what I promise, I am able to perform, by the great veneration that all my people have for me; and if thou dost not accept of this proffer, thou wilt do nothing; since for one head taken away, there will rise up a hundred *Caupolicans* to revenge my death, that the true one
N n "will

OVALLE. “ will not be missed. I desire not to be
1646. “ set at liberty, but to remain thy prisoner
“ till I perform my promise.”

All these reasons were of no use to *Caupolican*, for he was publickly sentenced to be empaled alive, and shot to death with arrows, for a terror to the rest of the *Indians*; though as time has since shewed, this had no other effect, than to light the fire of war more and more, and make the

wound almost incurable. He heard this hard sentence without any alteration in his countenance; but he desir'd with great concern to be baptiz'd. The priests are sent *Baptiz'd*, for, and after a short instruction he receives the holy ablution, and the character of a christian. After this the sentence was executed upon him, which he endur'd with great constancy. *And executed.*

The Conclusion.

THOUGH father Ovalle has continued in the remainder of his treatise to give an account of the various events of the war with the *Araucanos*, in which narrative he runs through the commands and actions of all the governors of *Chile*, to the peace made with that nation; yet it being by him more a piece of courtship to his nation, and to those families, than an information instructive to a foreign reader, it has been thought proper to take the death

of that great general *Caupolican* for the first natural period of that war. In the course of the remaining narrative, there are so many superstitious notions inculcated, so many improbable miracles given for the foundation of great enterprizes, and such a monkish spirit runs through the work, that here in *England* it would rather prejudice than recommend the impression, and is therefore omitted.

